

लाल बहादुर शास्त्री राष्ट्रीय प्रशासन अकादमी

L.B.S. National Academy of Administration

मसूरी  
MUSSOORIE

पुस्तकालय  
LIBRARY

100399

अवाप्ति संख्या

Accession No.

~~100387~~

वर्ग संख्या

Class No.

155.633

पुस्तक संख्या

Book No.

Har

GL 155.633

HOR



100399  
LBSNAA



# THE WAY OF ALL WOMEN





# *The Way of All Women*

A PSYCHOLOGICAL INTERPRETATION

---

By  
M. ESTHER HARDING, M.D., M.R.C.P., ENG.

WITH AN INTRODUCTION BY  
C. G. JUNG, M.D.

---

"The modern woman stands before a great cultural task, which means perhaps, the beginning of a new Era."

— C. G. Jung, *Woman in Europe*

---

LONGMANS, GREEN AND CO.  
LONDON · NEW YORK · TORONTO

1934

LONGMANS, GREEN AND CO.  
114 FIFTH AVENUE, NEW YORK  
221 EAST 20TH STREET, CHICAGO  
88 TREMONT STREET, BOSTON

LONGMANS, GREEN AND CO. LTD.  
39 PATERNOSTER ROW, LONDON, E C 4  
6 OLD COURT HOUSE STREET, CALCUTTA  
53 NICOL ROAD, BOMBAY  
36A MOUNT ROAD, MADRAS

LONGMANS, GREEN AND CO.  
480 UNIVERSITY AVENUE, TORONTO

HARDING  
THE WAY OF ALL WOMEN

COPYRIGHT · 1933  
BY M. ESTHER HARDING

ALL RIGHTS RESERVED, INCLUDING THE  
RIGHT TO REPRODUCE THIS BOOK, OR  
ANY PORTION THEREOF, IN ANY FORM

First Edition March 1933  
Reprinted May 1933, August 1933  
September 1933, May 1934  
July 1934

PRINTED IN THE UNITED STATES OF AMERICA

---

## *AUTHOR'S PREFACE*

THE IDEAS underlying the present volume are based on the teachings of Dr. C. G. Jung who has opened to us a new realm of thought and experience which promises a solution of many of the fundamental cultural problems of our day. These ideas, however, are not always easily translated into the terms of daily life. In this book an attempt has been made to perform the entirely feminine task of showing how the knowledge of human nature made available through the study of the unconscious may be applied to everyday experience in a helpful way.

Those who consult a psychologist usually do so with the hope of finding a means of dealing with their practical difficulties. If these people are merely instructed in theory they may well say: "This is very interesting, but how does it help me?" Many books today point out the problems of both social and personal life; many analyse the causes of prevalent modern problems; few undertake to demonstrate a method of living by which the individual may find a workable solution of his own difficulties.

In the following pages I have not attempted to offer a panacea for life's ills. I do not claim any superior knowledge of how the moral or social difficulties of our day may be met, but I do present certain suggestions for action through which each individual who is interested in truth may come to find it more fully in his own life, and through the practical application of the modern knowledge of the psyche may, perhaps, build for himself a firmer structure.

In these days when the outer props to which man has

pinned his faith seem to be crumbling, it is all the more necessary that an inner security be built up which shall be able to withstand the shock of outer misfortune. All the world over the dark forces of the "down-going" are making their power felt. No longer can we reassure ourselves with the thought of a bank balance. All too often we build a fortune as a child builds sand castles before a rising tide. Outer security seems to be undermined. Is there any other kind of security to which we can turn? The religious in times of misfortune have in all ages turned to the spiritual realm, discounting the values of this world. Such an other-worldliness no longer suffices the modern man who desires a more complete and satisfying life here and now. He wishes to realize his spirituality in this life rather than in a problematical hereafter. Yet exclusive concern with the outer world has proved as unsatisfying as the denial of its existence. Today we see arising a new evaluation of a different kind of reality based on the psychological understanding of human nature, which perhaps contains the germ of a middle way between the extremes of materialism and of other-worldliness.

Understanding is invaluable, but for many people, and especially for women, understanding must be supplemented by a workable practice if life is not to be lived in vain. For man creates the idea and woman transforms it into a living reality.

To those who seek such a practical way of life I dedicate my book.

I want to take this opportunity to express my thanks to Dr. Jung through whose sympathy and encouragement the book was conceived, and to my colleagues Dr. Eleanor Bertine and Dr. Kristine Mann who have discussed the material in every stage of its growth and to whom I am

indebted for illustrations and suggestions and without whose constant help the book would hardly have been possible. Dr. Bertine particularly has been untiring in her assistance and generous co-operation. I also want to express my thanks to those who have permitted me to quote from their dreams and other private material; and also to Messrs. Dodd, Mead & Company, Inc., for permission to quote from *Two Essays on Analytical Psychology* by C. G. Jung; and to Messrs. Harcourt, Brace and Company, Inc., for permission to quote from *Psychological Types* and *Contributions to Analytical Psychology* by C. G. Jung; and to The Oxford University Press for permission to quote from *Tibet's Great Yogi Milarepa* by Evans-Wentz.

M. E. H.



---

## INTRODUCTION

By DR. C. G. JUNG, of Zurich

*Translated by* MRS. CARY F. BAYNES

IT IS a pleasure to comply with the author's wish that I should write an introduction to her book. I have read her work in manuscript with the greatest interest, and am gratified to find that it does not belong in the category of certain priggish books which expatiate on the psychology of women with as much prejudiced onesidedness as loquacity, and finally overflow in a sentimental hymn to "holy motherhood." Such books have another unpleasant characteristic: they never speak of things as they are, but rather as they should be, and instead of taking the problem of the feminine soul seriously, they benevolently gloss over dark, and therefore unpleasant truths with advice which is as good as it is ineffectual. Such books are by no means always written by men — if they were they might be excusable — but many are written by women who seem to know as little about feminine feelings as men do.

It is a foregone conclusion among the initiated that men understand nothing of women's psychology as it actually is, but it is astonishing to find that women do not know themselves. However we are only surprised as long as we naïvely and optimistically imagine that mankind understands anything fundamental about the soul. Such knowledge and understanding belong to the very most difficult tasks an investigating mind can set itself. The newest developments in psychology show with an ever greater clarity that not only are there no simple formulae from which the world of the soul might be derived, but also that we have never

yet succeeded in defining the psychic field of experience with adequate certainty. Indeed, scientific psychology, despite its immense extension on the surface, has not even begun to free itself from a mountain-high mass of prejudices which persistently bars its entrance to the real soul. Psychology as the youngest of the sciences has only just developed and, therefore, is suffering from all those children's diseases which afflicted the adolescence of the other sciences in the late Middle Ages. There still exist psychologies which limit the psychic field of experience to consciousness and its contents, or which understand the psychic to be only a phenomenon of reaction without any trace of autonomy. The existence of an unconscious psyche has not yet attained undisputed validity, despite the presence of an overwhelming amount of empirical material which could prove beyond the peradventure of a doubt that there can be no psychology of consciousness without the recognition of the unconscious. Without this foundation, no datum of psychology, if it be in any way complex in nature, can be dealt with. Moreover, the actual soul with which we have to deal in life and in reality is complexity itself. For example, a psychology of woman cannot be written without an adequate knowledge of the unconscious backgrounds of the mind.

On the basis of a rich psychotherapeutic experience, Dr. Harding has drawn up a picture of the feminine psyche which, in extent and thoroughness, far surpasses previous works in this field. Her presentation is refreshingly free of prejudice and remarkable in the love of truth it displays. Her expositions never lose themselves in dead theories nor in fanatical fads which unfortunately are so frequently to be met with in just this field. In this way she has succeeded in penetrating with the light of knowledge into backgrounds and depths where before darkness prevailed. Only one half of feminine psychology can be covered by biological



and social concepts. But in this book it becomes clear that woman possesses also a peculiar spirituality very strange to man. Without knowledge of the unconscious this new point of view, so essential to the psychology of woman, could never have been brought out in such completeness. But also in many other places in the book the fructifying influence of the psychology of unconscious processes is evident.

At a time when the frequency of divorce reaches a record number, when the question of the relation of the sexes has become a perplexing problem, a book like this seems to me to be of the greatest help. To be sure, it does not provide the one thing that all expect, that is, a generally accepted recipe by which this dreadful complex of questions might be solved in a simple and practical way so that we need rack our brains about it no longer. On the other hand, the book contains an ample store of what we actually need very badly, namely, understanding — understanding of psychic facts and conditions with the help of which we can orientate ourselves in the complicated situations of life.

After all, why do we have a psychology? Why is it, that just now especially we interest ourselves in psychology? The answer is, everyone is in dire need of it. Humanity seems to have reached today a point where previous concepts are no longer adequate and where we begin to realize that we are confronted with something strange, the language of which we no longer understand. We live in a time when there dawns upon us a realization that the people living on the other side of the mountain are not made up exclusively of red-headed devils responsible for all the evil on this side of the mountain. A sign of this dim intuition has also penetrated the relation between the sexes; we do not all of us say to ourselves, "Everything good dwells within me, everything evil within thee."

Today there already exist super-moderns who ask themselves in all seriousness if something or other is not out of joint ? if we are not perhaps somewhat too unconscious, somewhat antiquated ? and whether this may not be the reason why when confronted with difficulties in relationship between the sexes we still continue to apply with disastrous results methods of the middle ages if not those of the cave man ? There are people indeed who read with horror the Pope's encyclical on Christian marriage, though they can admit that to cave-men the so-called "Christian" marriage means a cultural advance. But although we are far from having overcome our pre-historic mentality, and although it is just in the field of sexuality that man becomes most vividly aware of his mammalian nature and also experiences its most signal triumphs, none the less, certain ethical refinements have entered in which permit the man who has behind him from ten to fifteen centuries of Christian education, to progress toward a somewhat higher level.

On this level, spirit — from the biological point of view an incomprehensible psychic phenomenon — plays no small psychological rôle. Spirit had an important word to say in the idea of Christian marriage itself, and in the modern questioning and depreciation of marriage, the question of spirit enters vigorously into the discussion. It appears in a negative way as counsel for the instincts, and in a positive way as defender of human dignity. Small wonder then that a wild and confusing conflict arises between man as an instinctual creature of nature and as a spiritually conditioned, cultural being. The worst thing about it is that the one is forever trying to do violence to the other, in order to bring about a so-called harmonious and unified solution of the conflict. Unfortunately, too many persons still believe in this method which continues to be all-powerful in the world of politics; there are only a few here and there who con-

demn it as barbaric, and who would rather set up in its place a just compromise whereby each side of man's nature would receive a hearing.

But unhappily, in the problem between the sexes, no one can bring about a compromise by himself alone; it can only be brought about in relation to the other sex. Therefore the necessity of psychology ! On this level, psychology becomes a kind of special pleading or, rather, a method of relationship. Psychology guarantees real knowledge of the other sex and thus supplants arbitrary opinions which are the source of the incurable misunderstandings now undermining in increasing numbers the marriages of our time.

Dr. Harding's book is an important contribution to this striving of our time for a deeper knowledge of the human being and for a clarification of the confusion existing in the relationship between the sexes.

C. G. JUNG

Zurich, February 1932



---

## CONTENTS

CHAPTER	PAGE
I. ALL THINGS TO ALL MEN . . . . .	I
II. THE GHOSTLY LOVER . . . . .	41
III. WORK . . . . .	78
IV. FRIENDSHIP . . . . .	103
V. MARRIAGE . . . . .	135
VI. MATERNITY . . . . .	176
VII. OFF THE BEATEN TRACK . . . . .	215
VIII. AUTUMN AND WINTER . . . . .	270
IX. PSYCHOLOGICAL RELATIONSHIP . . . . .	294



# THE WAY OF ALL WOMEN

## CHAPTER I

### *ALL THINGS TO ALL MEN*

IN CHILDHOOD we are taught certain stories and myths telling of the origin of the world and of mankind and giving a general view of life and of conduct. It is as though they said: "This is the way things came into being, and this shows their essential nature and relationship." These legends and tales which appeal so immediately to the child are for the most part as old as historical man and hark back to the infancy of the race. The views they express, insofar as they are still binding today, must represent something deeply embedded in the mind of man. Man has corrected and refined these beliefs in certain realms: in other spheres they remain powers in the background, determining his conduct. In no way are these unseen and unrecognized forces more strikingly manifested than in man's general attitude towards woman.

"In the beginning" — according to the record in Genesis — "God created the heaven and the earth" with all that they contained. The summit of his creation was mankind — "male and female created He them." In this statement is expressed a belief in divine creation, but the statement is also intended to account for the simple fact that mankind is *both* male and female. The first chapter of Genesis contains, however, another and a better known version of the making

of man: it is the story of Adam's sleep and of the creation of Eve by the removal of one of his ribs. This story shows us woman conceived of as a part of man, taken out of his side while he was unconscious. It is a myth which represents woman as an unconscious part of man, wholly secondary to him, without any living spirit or soul of her own. This myth illustrates an attitude fundamental in man's view of woman. If the story had been told by women we should have had a different account of the creation. For instance, in a school examination paper the question was set: "Give an account of the creation of man." A little girl wrote: "First God created Adam. Then He looked at him and said, 'I think if I tried again I could do better.' Then He created Eve." Here we have a perfectly naïve feminine version of the story.

There is a great discrepancy, I admit, between a myth hallowed by age and religious tradition, and this school child's version of it. But from the psychological point of view they are none the less valid examples of the rift between two attitudes. This rift is illustrated, on the one hand, by man's still prevalent way of regarding woman, and on the other, by the worst exaggeration of the feminist movement.

Where does the truth lie? Is it to be found somewhere between the two points of view or is it necessary to approach the whole subject from an entirely different angle?

The first condition for an impartial investigation into the relationships between men and women is to rule out old assumptions of the superiority or the inferiority of one to the other. We must not hold the view that woman is man's inferior; nor must we take our stand on the little girl's version of the creation and assume that man is a creature who has not yet evolved to the female standard. This latter view is secretly held by many women, but they never express it



directly, for to do so would be heresy. Indeed, the majority of women who hold it most firmly would deny it if challenged. But, if we talk with them, we can see this assumption underlying such simple comments as: "Men are so stupid." "Men, poor things, they can't help it." "They are all children," and so on. The implication is that women are wiser and more adult than men, but this is kept secret. It is not only not talked about; it is not even formulated, and the women who say such things about men do not really *think* them in their heads!

It is not the feminist woman who makes such comments. She is too concerned with trying to be man's equal, and so discounts all differences, physiological as well as psychological. She never depreciates man, for her aim is to be like a man, equal to a man, no whit his inferior. She no longer has any standpoint for criticism of him, because she has sold her birthright, her feminine inheritance, her uniqueness, by cancelling the difference arising from the fact that she is female. It is only the very feminine women who in secret speak so condescendingly of men. Such women are strong in their feminine position; they make no attempt to rival men; they do not want an individual position in the world, for they are wanted by men, who, indeed, are even willing to support them.

Just what, then, is the difference between the woman who is the man's woman and the woman who is not the man's woman? Men have often commented upon it. Their attention has been caught by the latter type of woman only because of her competition which threatens them in business or in the professions, or because of her insistence on her political rights. But their deeper interest has been in the man's woman, primarily on account of what she has meant to them personally. She has been repeatedly portrayed in plays and novels and we can sense her peculiar influence in

lyric poetry which so often celebrates her. She figures in myths and legends, but she is always shown from the man's point of view. And even when, as in these modern days, attempts are made to give a more objective picture of human beings, we find that such women are still described, for the most part, from the masculine point of view. There is, for instance, no outstanding autobiography written by a woman of this type, which presents to our closer scrutiny her own inner experience of life. For these women most often present themselves to us solely in terms of their external experience; they recount outer events and the part they played in them but fail to convey a picture of their inner experience. Possibly they are not sufficiently aware of themselves to be able to give a picture of what their subjective life is like. For this type of woman is generally very un-self-conscious; she does not analyse herself or her motives: she just *is*, and, for the most she is inarticulate. Furthermore, she has, as a rule, no urge to make herself understood by a large audience. Her interest and her life lie in her relation to one man or perhaps to two or three men: hers is a *personal* interest, not one which concerns itself with a larger group. Hence it is that women of this type, numerous as they are — for, indeed, they may be considered to make up the primary type of womanhood — have never been interpreted truly. Their silence has become their “mystery.” A mass of literature has grown up about them which purports to explain them, but the explanation is always based on the man's idea of the woman; it is never the woman's interpretation of herself.

Dr. C. G. Jung, of Zurich, has, perhaps, faced this problem more effectively than any other psychologist. Not only has he analysed the problem of the significance of woman from the point of view of the man, but he, alone among psychologists, has *clearly differentiated between this subjective*

significance and the objective reality of the woman herself, and has defined clearly the type which can most readily carry for the man the significance of his own subjective and unconscious values. But here Jung's further discussion of the subject necessarily meets a blank wall. He, as a man, can tell us relatively little of the woman herself and of her part in the proceeding. Only from the point of view of an observer can he tell us what value, if any, *she* gains from carrying the image of the man's unconscious values and from associating with the man who thus glorifies her.

Such a woman, who is peculiarly adapted through her own natural gifts to be man's partner, in the fashion implied in the Genesis idyl, is the primary type of woman *in nature*. She is the female human animal, whose whole attention is focussed instinctively on her mate. She adapts herself to his wishes, makes herself beautiful in his eyes, charms him, pleases him. These things are naturally a manifestation of the fundamental biological relation between the sexes. But where these instinctive reactions appear in modern women the aim of Mother Nature is masked, in accordance with the conventional code, while the woman herself may be quite unaware of the hidden meaning of her actions.

Primitive woman was doubtless quite content with the rôle that the Genesis myth assigned to her, for in primitive situations, where the biological aim is the sole guide in life, that the woman shall be attractive to the man and shall call forth and hold his interest, is all that is important for life and for her. Even until today some women have remained almost as unconscious as their most remote ancestress and are still content to be only man's helpmeet and counterpart. But humanity at large has moved since those days towards a greater consciousness, chiefly through the emergence of a conscious and personal ego whose aims have conflicted with the simple urges which Mother Nature first implanted in

our breasts. Thus, as woman has evolved and become more aware of herself as a separate entity — an ego — a conflict has arisen within her psyche between the individual values which she has attained and the ancient, collective, feminine trends — and conflict is the beginning of consciousness.

There are three typical stages of development through which the human being passes in the gradual evolution of consciousness. These may be called the naïve, the sophisticated, and the conscious. The first, or naïve, is related to nature only. It is a way of functioning which is entirely un-self-conscious. It is, so to speak, the state of man before the Fall, when he was entirely innocent and at one with himself. In this stage there is hardly any differentiation between conscious and unconscious for self-consciousness has not arisen. The individual lives in a primitive union with nature, a state only broken by the emergence of the ego. This is a change of great importance in the development of the personality, and is a definite step towards consciousness.

From this point the individual enters the period of sophistication. The natural powers within him and the resources of the world without are gradually explored and exploited, and the capacities and powers thus gained are organized under the leadership of the ego. Personal aggrandizement and the satisfaction of the ego arise and form a new life-motive. The lust for power comes to occupy an increasing place. But at this point a new factor may come into the picture. The selfishness of the power attitude may obtrude itself on consciousness. Love perhaps arises which will dispute the dominant position of the ego, or some other value which transcends personal considerations, may replace those formerly held. This change in emphasis inaugurates a gradual redemption of the personality from the dominance of the ego, and the third stage — the stage of consciousness — begins.

In the innocent play of domestic animals we may see certain ways of acting which we recognize as fundamentally masculine or feminine. The arts and wiles which the female uses to attract the male are so nearly akin to the ways of a pretty woman that we cannot help smiling. These things are manifestations of primitive femininity. They can be seen too in tiny children. A little girl, while still quite young, begins to act in a different way from a little boy. Where he is independent and aggressive, she is coy and winsome. She begins very early in life to gain her ends through coaxing, or merely through being adorable. Her whole way of functioning is in relation to someone else from whom she may attract attention or care or love. In many grown women we see the same process at work. The woman, herself, is doubtless unaware of what she is doing. She may have no deeper motive than eagerness to *please*, to do what is expected of her, to fulfil another person's ideal of her. This other person is usually a man. She rarely stops to ask what she herself wants or how she feels. She is content if he is content, provided his contentment is only to be attained through her. In this way she makes of herself a sort of mirror which reflects the man's mood, his half-unrealized feelings. If he is sad, she is melancholy. If he is joyous, she bubbles with mirth. And, indeed, so subtle is her unconscious, or half-unconscious, intuition of his mood that often she will react to it while he himself is still unaware what his mood is. So it is that he seems to discover what should be his own feeling *in her*. For men tend to be exceedingly unconscious of their own feeling moods. Even though a man may have suffered an intense personal loss, he is very likely to react to it as an almost *impersonal* emergency, requiring a practical adaptation only, and to remain entirely unaware that he has also a feeling reaction to it as a *personal* experience. All he knows is that he feels out of harmony

with himself. In this state he goes to see a woman such as we have been describing. She senses his mood almost before he speaks to her. Regardless of what she had been thinking or feeling before his arrival she now reflects the feeling of which he is unaware. If he has had a blow which he does not recognize as an emotional one, it is melancholy she reflects — a great vague, contentless yearning. As she does not know what there is to be sorry about, her melancholy cannot have much point or content, but this very vagueness allows his own sorrow or regret to find a place in her; he can project his unconscious feeling to her, and no matter what it may be, it can flow into her and so find its own form, undisturbed by any preconceptions on her part. He feels his personal sorrow raised to the level of a universal grief and is relieved of his own pain in contemplating the pain of mankind. By his contact with her he has gained a contact with his own feeling, and through the generalization of her mood he has found a way of adapting to his own grief, which, left unrealized, might have overwhelmed him.

So it is that a man can find in such a woman an image or picture of the other part of himself, otherwise unknown to him, which, indeed, he does not recognize as belonging to himself. This image seems to be in her; he perceives it, but as though it were her feeling, not his own. When a subjective content is experienced in this way it is commonly spoken of as *projected*. The fact that its subjective source is not recognized means that it is in a sense *unconscious*. When projected by a man upon a woman it is like a mirage, an illusion, concealing the woman who is there; his own unconscious feeling-contents meet him in personified form. The sum of these contents make up the unrecognized part of man's psyche, and when brought together into a whole

constitute the man's feminine soul,\* who exercises over him an irresistible fascination and appears variously as *La Desirée* or *La Belle Dame sans Merci*. This feminine soul of the man, Jung has called *anima*.

Men with the same inherited background have anima figures which are strangely similar, so that the anima, herself, can be recognized by her characteristics, which are universal and collective. In imaginative writings, especially in novels and plays, the anima is often drawn unmistakably. Anima figures form the central characters in such imaginative stories as *She* by Rider Haggard, *Green Mansions* by W. H. Hudson, and many others. She-who-must-be-obeyed and the Bird Girl represent the anima of their authors. They have certain characteristics in common: they are only part human (each is both more and less than a real woman); they carry the feeling values; and each has a quality which makes her lightest word a command, absolutely binding on the hero.

These are portrayals of the anima herself, the collective soul of man, which we feel to be non-human, but many women, both in fiction and in real life, show certain anima characteristics which are more or less modified by human traits. For, although it is true that a man's anima as a rule becomes apparent to him only when it is projected to a

\* *Soul* is here used in a psychological, not a theological, sense. According to Jung, the term *soul* "is really a psychological recognition of the existence of a semi-conscious psychic complex that has achieved a partial autonomy of function. . . . The autonomy of the soul-complex naturally supports the idea of an invisible personal being who apparently lives in a world very different from ours." (Jung, C. G., *Two Essays on Analytical Psychology*, pp. 205, 206. Dodd, Mead & Company, 1928.) The reader is referred to Jung's discussion of this whole subject in the *Two Essays* and to the definitions of soul and soul-image in the chapter "Definitions" in *Psychological Types* (Jung, C. G., *Psychological Types*, Harcourt, Brace & Company, 1923). Wherever in this book technical terms have been used, the author has endeavoured to use them in the sense in which Jung has defined them, either in the chapter on definitions referred to or scattered throughout his other writings.

woman, yet the anima herself is not a real woman. She represents, rather, a collective, or universalized, picture of woman as she has appeared through the centuries of human experience *in relation to man*. This last factor is important. All that a man sees is coloured for him by his own subjective contents. And inasmuch as woman, throughout the ages, has been to man the symbol of his unknown feminine soul, his eyes have been peculiarly blinded when he has looked at her. A man without a soul is but half a man, consequently when his soul is projected to another human being, it is as though half of himself were in her. The woman becomes enormously important as well as enormously attractive to him. He longs to get into relation with her, for by so doing he will come into relation once more with his own soul, which is otherwise lost to him.

Certain women have a peculiar aptitude for reflecting the man's anima. However, not all women have this gift. Those who are so endowed form a definite group, although naturally the women comprising it differ markedly from one another in many particulars, for this group makes up a large proportion of womanhood throughout the world and contains women of many qualities. Yet there are certain characteristics held by all these women in common — a fact which justifies our speaking of them as forming a distinct anima type.

The general characteristics of the anima-woman change as she passes through the different stages of psychological development. In the first, or naïve, stage she is a natural, instinctive creature. She manifests in her every action the innocent functioning of feminine instinct. Her whole attention is directed, albeit without her conscious knowledge, to the effects she produces on men. She is completely naïve. She has no conscious critique of her own actions and motives; she has no objective standard or criterion at all. It



never occurs to her to judge herself by any external standard, or, indeed, to view herself as object. She is just female creature, as unconscious of herself and as innocent as the domestic animals. If a man projects his anima to her, she is unaware of it. She simply lives what she feels and what she is. She is related to herself and to her own instinctive satisfactions, just as the animals are. She is a nature product. And for this reason she never knows beforehand what she wants. She is ambiguous. "She will and she won't." The opposites in her sleep side by side, so that she has a certain bivalent quality, like nature's. The man senses his soul in her and seeks to be united to her. His anima is also like nature, bivalent. So her ambiguity fits in with his need.

Anon, the ego awakes in her and the second stage of development begins. She finds that by living instinctively she attracts the attention of a man or of men. The man, finding in her a symbol or picture of his soul, wants a close relationship with her so that he may be reunited to his own soul. Because of this urgent need, he is willing to give her almost anything she asks. She wants a relationship with him too, or perhaps we should say "Nature in her" wants it for biological ends. But, because she is, as a rule, unaware of this natural urge within her, she acts as though she were indifferent, with the result that the man pays further court to her. Then, if her ego comes to consciousness, she makes a discovery, namely, that this seeming indifference makes her more desirable from the man's point of view; and she begins to use it as a definite trick, of which she is at least partly aware, to attract the man's attention and gifts. Or, perhaps the woman is truly indifferent and cold. She may really not want the man's attentions, but she realizes that the power she has over him is a great asset. If she then, either deliberately or half-unconsciously, begins to exploit

the man's projection, using his need to her own advantage, the flirt gradually emerges, who in her worst aspect becomes the "gold-digger."

Ego development in the anima-woman, however, may show itself in a much more adapted and social form. For instance, a woman may use her charm and the attraction she has for men in a socially desirable and acceptable way, which yet is a conscious making use of her gifts to attain an end. If she is married she develops skill in managing her husband and the whole situation between them. She is always at hand, she always anticipates his wishes, she makes home so pleasant that he of necessity has to fall in with her plans and do what is expected of him. A woman of this type makes what is popularly called a "wise wife." Her ego orientation is not directed to such purely personal and selfish ends as in the case of the flirt and the gold-digger, but to ends which are seemingly legitimate, namely, making her husband happy and her marriage a success. The danger of this orientation becomes apparent, however, when we sense a subtle emphasis on the possessive pronoun. It is *her* husband, *her* marriage! In order to keep her husband happy such a woman almost inevitably has to reserve a part of her reactions. She gives him only as much of her feelings as is calculated to be good for him, and by skillful management she keeps him unaware not only of a certain lack of reality in her reactions but also of the fact that life is humdrum and dull. If, however, she should be ill or obliged to be away from home, it may be that the husband will wake up and begin to find life apart from his all-loving wife far more interesting than when he was perpetually lapped about by her solicitous care. Then he becomes aware that her kindness and unselfishness are not all they seemed, and the ego-centric attitude behind her mask of the "good wife" peeps out.

If such a woman is to develop beyond the stage of egocentricity something more is needed than the refinement of her desires for personal success and happiness. Her natural capacity to attract the man's anima projection gives her an importance and power which are in a certain sense fictitious, for she has done nothing to merit them. They depend solely on the man's illusion. It is like a fortune put into her hands for which she has not had to work. To sacrifice this power requires real devotion to a purpose or value which is superior to her own ego. Redemption from primitive instinct, on the one hand, and the domination of the egotistic attitude, on the other, demand first that the woman become aware of her own instinct and of the part she plays in relation to the man. If she truly loves him or if a deeper relation to life develops within her, then the whole current of her desire may be diverted towards a non-personal goal — to one which supersedes the goal of personal satisfaction and superiority. Thus a fresh step is made in the conscious development of the individual — a step towards individuation.\*

It is the primitive, feminine element in woman which catches the projection of the man's anima in actual life. There is in all women a streak or thread of this primitive

\* It is necessary here to distinguish between the use of the terms collective, individual, and personal. As far as possible, Jung's usage has been followed. For example, in *Psychological Types*, Jung says that a man "who in public life is extremely energetic, bold, obstinate, wilful and inconsiderate" may at home "appear good-natured, mild, accommodating, even weak" (p. 589). He asks, "Which then is the true character, the real personality?" and answers, "According to my view, such a man has no real character at all, he is not individual but collective, that is, he corresponds with general circumstances and expectations. . . He is an individual, of course, like every being, but an unconscious one. Through his more or less complete identification with the attitude of the moment, he at least deceives others, and also often himself, as to his real character. He puts on a mask. . . A man who is identified with this mask I would call 'personal' as opposed to 'individual'" (p. 590). . . "The psychological individual is characterized by its peculiar and, in certain respects, unique psychology. . . The psychological individual, or individuality, has an *a priori* unconscious existence. . . A conscious process of differentiation is required to bring the individuality to consciousness" (p. 560). (Jung, C. G., *Psychological Types*. Harcourt, Brace & Company, 1923.)

femininity, although in some women it may be almost entirely repressed and in others, kept out of sight by a conscious effort. Our Western education of girls seeks to eradicate its manifestations as far as possible; hence with the majority of our women it remains a trend, a factor of their psychology, but not the dominating one. This trend, however, is the ruling factor in the personality of certain women and girls who make up the groups of anima-women. It is interesting to note how such a woman functions in life and how she affects those around her.

When a woman of marked anima type comes into a community, all the young men, unmarried and married alike, are immediately fascinated by her. They have their heads turned, and cannot say too much in her praise, while they vie with each other in showing her attentions. The women, however, have a different opinion of her. At first they are merely cold and aloof, but soon become critical and blame her for the defection of their husbands and lovers. They usually make the mistake of criticizing her to their men and are horrified to find that the men defend her. Or, if masculine courage is lacking for that — and it takes a courage of no mean order for a man to defend a woman when feminine public opinion condemns her — the men compensate for what they consider injustice and prejudice on the part of their women by redoubling their attentions to her. This merely adds to the feminine fury against the “depraved woman,” the “hussy.” But what of the woman herself? She will say: “I only want to be left alone, to go my own way and live my own life. I do not set out to attract men, and I certainly do not want to estrange them from their wives and sweethearts. Why do all the women shun me and look askance at me? I am lonely and want a woman friend. I want to be good. But wherever I go men follow me, they offer to see me home, and even make improper advances

to me. Is it my fault ? I do not want it. But the poor things are so unhappy I simply must comfort them as far as I can; only a woman with a heart of stone could do less. But I always send them home again to their wives or sweet-hearts. Can I help it if they come back ?” Such, at all events, is her way of putting the case.

Now here are three different estimates of the same situation. The man’s estimate is based on the value he finds through being able to project his anima and in that way to make a relation to his own unconscious. The wives, on the other hand, hate one who acts this part, as they think, shamelessly. Their resistance to her is doubtless strengthened because they would all like to have her power over men, but their moral code prevents them from exercising even such powers as they have. It is a case of “they could if they would, but they dare not.” And their involuntary renunciation makes them bitter as it did the fox who called the grapes sour.

Meanwhile the woman herself remains quite unconscious of what she is doing. She feels herself to be entirely innocent. Her actions and their results have no connection. She cannot see herself as a whole. When talking with such a woman one gets a sense of the most amazing ambiguity and of the extraordinary ambivalence of her every word and action. She does not know in the least that she invites the attentions of the men who flock around her, or that she plays them up one against another. She just *is*. And no one is more amazed at the results of her actions than she herself. I remember once seeing a girl of this type who was saying good-bye to a group of admirers clustered around her. She shook hands with all but one. As it gradually dawned on him that she was passing him over, he looked more and more crestfallen, and slipped out of the group to open the door for her. As she came out he said in the greatest dejection, “Aren’t you going to say good-bye to

me ?” “Oh, I thought you were going to see me home,” she replied. Needless to say the young man went with her although up to that moment he had had no intention of leaving the party so early. But—and here we come to the interesting part of the incident—the girl had had no intention of asking him to leave with her. Her oversight of him had been purely accidental, it was not till she saw his dejected attitude that it occurred to her to ask him to accompany her. Further, she had no idea that he would interpret her action as singling him out from her admirers. She was later both hurt and puzzled to discover that he had construed her action as encouragement and that, on this basis, he expected her to accept a greater intimacy with him. She was puzzled still more to find that the other admirers were jealous of the preference she had unwittingly shown him.

A girl of this type will say the most provocative things and will allow herself to become involved in a compromising situation with one whom, perhaps, she really dislikes, only to be amazed and hurt when he takes her words and actions at their face value. Or, perhaps she wishes to dismiss an admirer. She really wants to be rid of him, but instead of taking a definite stand, telling him plainly that she does not like his attentions, she compromises, puts him off. She runs away, as it were, but always gives him a final glance over her shoulder, with a “come hither” look in her eye. If one challenges this attitude, she defends it by saying, “It would be so cruel to dismiss him finally; I am only trying to get him to accept the idea of separation gradually.” It never occurs to her that she is like the good lady who, on being told that the puppy’s tail had been docked said, “Oh, how cruel to cut it all off at once. Why didn’t they do it a bit at a time, so that the puppy could get used to it.” The animal-woman is kind, but her kindness is cruelty, and her innocent

goodness makes her act as the most sophisticated man-killer would. For this type of woman is a nature product, and nature is always bivalent — good and bad, kind and cruel.

All these ways of acting are purely feminine; they are collective, not individual, and occur whenever masculine interests and desires — masculine libido in short — is brought into contact with feminine libido. Women in whom this way of functioning is strong find the same attitude in *all* the men they meet. To them all men are alike. Therefore *all* men may find in such a woman a collective feminine attitude which can accept every man and his masculine libido no matter what form it takes. Such a woman is truly “all things to all men.”

Certain women of the anima type are curiously aware of their own lack of inner one-ness. Such a woman has an intuitive perception of the bivalence and ambiguity of her own nature. She may, indeed, ascribe it to a subjective sense of being not one woman but many women. For instance, Anna Kingsford,\* an exceedingly intuitive and subjective woman, said in one of her talks with her biographer: “I am such a puzzle to myself and I want to be explained . . . I want to know . . . especially how it is that I am so many and such different kinds of people and which of them all I am or ought to be. For the many mes in me are not even in agreement among themselves; but some of them actually hate each other, and some are as bad as others are good.” Later, in trying to account for her sense of plurality, she became convinced that she was a reincarnation of many women who had lived ages before her and that she had carried over memories of these previous incarnations. I have often encountered this phenomenon in an anima-woman. The splitting up of the one woman into many women is the

\* Maitland, Edward, *The Life of Anna Kingsford*, Vol. I, Chap. IV. J. Watkins, London.

obverse of being "all things to all men," for one of the women within her is called out by her contact with one man and another, by the next. She is like a many-sided crystal which turns automatically without any volition on her part under the influence of changes in her environment. By this unconscious adaptation, first one facet and then another is presented to view and always that facet which best reflects his anima is presented to the gazer.

Women who function primarily as the anima of men are not by any means all alike in character or personality, but beneath their external differences a fundamental similarity in psychological attitude and reaction can be found which accounts for the effect they produce in life and especially on men. Three kinds of women will be described who apparently are poles asunder, as different from each other as women could be, and yet on deeper investigation it will become clear that they all have a basic attitude to life which is characteristic of the anima-woman and differentiates her from others.

First, we have the innocent flower-like maiden, who is generally fair and pretty, who always suggests innocence, and, who, regardless of what her age may be, invariably plays the part of a child. She is the heroine of many books. She is always pure and good; she may be sinned against, but she never sins. She is man's good angel. Dora in *David Copperfield* is just such a person. She is ignorant of the world and its ways, yet she is often engaged in trying to reform some reprobate who, whatever his faults may be, has at least ventured into the struggle of life, instead of remaining on the outskirts as she has done. Such a girl is glorified out of all semblance to reality by the projection of the man's anima, for when he sees his anima — his soul — in her, she becomes to him an "angel-child." To one who is not under this illusion, she appears a dull enough little



thing. Her education is often defective and generally consists of a knowledge of how to dress and how to hold her tongue, though in the latter accomplishment she may be deficient ! She rarely has anything to offer in the way of achievement, yet her charm and good looks and her "influence for good" undoubtedly have their place in the world. Under this flower-like innocence, however, one may often glimpse a "something" which suggests that the girl is not so innocent and disinterested as she appears. Her gestures seem to hint that she perhaps fancies herself in the rôle of guardian angel, or she shows a tendency, scarcely recognized by herself, to seek the centre of the stage. The dreams and phantasies of such girls may show the ego trend in the unconscious unmistakably. One girl dreamed that she was dressed like little Lord Fauntleroy coming down a wide staircase into a large hall where a group of people, all gazing at her in silent admiration, awaited her. The analysis of such a girl often reveals deeply hidden away a cherished phantasy of herself as a princess. In real life women of this type nearly always select from their group of admirers the important men as recipients of their favours and, as a rule, make what is called a good marriage. All these things indicate that the ego which is so conspicuously absent from the conscious personality is not entirely missing, but is in the unconscious, so that an ego trend poisons, as it were, the purity of the girl's motives in every situation.

The flower-like anima-girl is doomed to be a child to the end of her days. Childishness may be charming enough while she is still young; it may be tolerable even through her thirties, but after that it becomes pathetic or boresome, for she goes through life as the mummy of a child in a painted casket. She is condemned to be a perpetual Ophelia, counting her flowers while others around her are concerned with the possibly tragic destiny of men and states. Novelists have

recognized that this type of woman must always be young and have, indeed, resorted to the device of keeping her eternally youthful by making her die early — a fate, which strange to say, frequently happens to her in real life.

The next instance is apparently the exact opposite of the child-anima. She is dark, full-blooded, passionate; and lives all of her feelings and instincts entirely uncensored. The innocent flower-like girl has no consciousness of her own instinct, she may well be entirely cold or unawakened, but this woman is passion personified. Her tempestuous moods lure and hold the man. He never knows where he will find her from one day to the next — whether he will be received with passionate embraces or with a stiletto! Such a woman lives exactly as she feels, without any calculation as to the effects of her action, and she always feels strongly. She personifies "Nature, red in tooth and claw." Kipling's line, "The female of the species is more deadly than the male," characterizes her. Apart from the violence of her reactions to men, she may be domestically minded; she may wish to "be good" and to live a quiet and ordered life; but ever and again men come around her and something within her is stirred and acts automatically, quite regardless of her own conscious wishes in the matter. Carmen is a good example of the passionate anima-woman, but with her the ego trend in the unconscious is dominant for she delights to gain power over men in order to flaunt them.

A woman of this kind whether egotistic or not is enormously attractive to certain types of men. It is as though her abandonment to her emotions releases in them their over-restrained feelings and permits them to experience that irrationality of nature which they have held under too rational a rule. They may not even need to abandon themselves to their more irrational passions; for many a man it may be sufficient to have the woman abandon herself. For,

in her abandonment, it is as though for a little while his untamed irrational anima finds release.

Finally, there is the woman who stands in marked contrast to both the flower-like anima-girl and the passionate anima-woman. She is cold and distant and unreachable. By her very passivity, she releases the man, in certain instances, from a too great intensity. She is usually without emotional expression and is utterly impersonal. She gives no indication of her own wishes; answers a question either by silence or by a cold phrase which may have various interpretations.

Galsworthy, in portraying Irene in the *Forsyte Saga*, has drawn a woman of this type with great skill. It has been said that Irene was frigid to the wrong man and glowing to the right man, but this does not alter the fact that she played the cold anima to Soames. Irene could not by will power, it is true, give a sexual response to Soames, whom she did not love, but she failed none the less to live up to what was required of her by the law of relatedness. She lived for several years in marriage with him and made herself into a statue. In spite of the fact that the responsibility for the related side of life belongs principally to the woman, Irene withheld her feeling reactions in all the episodes of everyday life and so gave Soames no opportunity to develop a better kind of relationship to her. She continued in the marriage and did nothing about it. Even in the final scene (which doubtless rouses the indignation of every male reader of the book) when Soames forced her to an unwelcome intimacy she still maintained the passive rôle of the injured wife. Why didn't she fight him? It is almost impossible to assault an adult, determined woman single-handed. But this would have meant taking a stand, something of which she was hardly capable. She preferred to maintain the rôle of injured innocence. As a result of her passivity, Soames was

virtually tied to a corpse through all the years of his marriage. I hold no brief for Soames. He is not painted in attractive colours. But one must ask why did not Irene play the game, *or* end the situation? The answer is that she was afraid. As Soames' wife she had a home and a position of wealth. If she left him she would have to support herself and face the condemnation of society. This she was not strong enough to face alone. She needed the support of Bossiny and the strength born of her love for him, in order to free herself from her bondage. By remaining with Soames she could get what she wanted without giving anything in return. Her action depended on an unconscious ego-power motive.

When we come close to such a woman to find out what she is really like we shall probably discover that, like her sisters described above, she is entirely innocent of any conscious wish to tyrannize over the man. She is probably a very nebulous person who is not clearly conscious of her own wishes, quite unable to say what she feels at any moment, and liable, as Irene was, to be thrust into a marriage which she only subsequently discovers is distasteful to her. She probably spends most of her time in a half twilight state — not fully aware of what is going on around her — never really rousing herself to make a definite decision which she is prepared to stand by. She has, perhaps, assumed her cold, distant manner as a convenient shield between herself and reality, having found it to be the most effective armour against those importunate persons and circumstances, irritating because always recalling to her the obligation to wake up and make a decision. She, too, is bivalent — she will and she won't; and rather than rouse herself to definite action she will endure anything. Here again we have this ambiguous quality of the anima-woman.

These typical anima-women are, in each instance, naïve

and unconscious. They act in this way because this is the way "it" acts in them. Such a woman is a nature product and in this stage of consciousness, at all events, is innocent of any deliberate attempt to gain power over the man whom her charms have attracted. She does not realize that her power over him is due to his anima projection which her own nebulous quality has mirrored. For him the relation with her is weighted through his anima; while for her the situation holds the possibility of the fulfilment of her biological needs, an aspect, however, which is frequently neglected. Beyond that it holds the possibilities of personal satisfaction, because of the fictitious position of importance she occupies on account of his absorption in her.

The woman, however, may grow tired of carrying the man's anima. She may become increasingly aware that her husband does not really love *her*, but is always seeing something over her shoulder, as it were. She may say that she does not want this any longer and that she wishes to be loved for herself, but that she cannot prevent his seeing her as other than she is. This "cannot," however, is not altogether true. If she would show herself in her true colours by giving her reaction at the time, he would soon begin to discriminate between her and his anima. If asked why she does not do this, she will almost invariably admit that she is afraid of losing him. In other words, she is not really prepared to give up the advantages she gains by carrying his anima projection, although she may also want greater liberty in order to develop her own personality. For to play the anima rôle means to act, think, and feel *only* as feminine being. It is a rôle which is entirely collective, representing a biological and instinctive reaction to the male.

But woman is after all, not only a nature product, not only an instinctive feminine creature; she is also a human being. In the Western world, at all cultural levels above the peasant,

there is present, at least potentially, an ego, a centre of consciousness which says "I" and which prevents the woman from being *only* nature. Yet if she lives only as anima, the ego remains relatively unconscious. If this is the case, her actions are all tinged by ego-power motives which can be unmasked by looking below the surface. Thus every woman who neglects her real reaction in too great compliance to the wishes of the man plays to catch the projection of the man's anima. She has a motive, although, it is true, the motive may be an unconscious one. No reaction is over-ridden except by a stronger one; action follows the strongest motive. If a woman allows her wish or impulse to be over-ridden, there must be a stronger motive at work than her conscious wish. If, in complying with the man's wishes, she represses her own desire, she does it in order to catch the man's anima — in the last analysis to catch the man — and her motive is the wish for power or prestige or support, even though she herself may not be aware of this fact.

When this ego motive, latent in the unconscious, becomes dominant and rises to consciousness in any one of these women, she embarks on the second stage in the evolution of consciousness. The naïve woman becomes the sophisticated woman of the world. She is frankly intent on power and superiority and exploits men for money or for prestige or for the satisfaction of her instincts. The flirt, the gold-digger, the scalp-hunter, the courtesan, all are types of the anima-woman who has gone wrong, as it were; whose natural gifts have been organized under the ego. These women are, or become, almost always cold and aloof. Even the passionate type learns to use her instinct for the gaining of power. She does not give herself even to her own passion, for her deepest interest lies elsewhere.

Some who read this book may be disturbed because so often the so-called lower types of women have been chosen as

illustrations. Naturally extreme cases are chosen in order to point out a particular psychological trend. They have also been chosen because they show unmistakably the traits of character which always exist in some degree in the woman who reacts only as *anima*, even though the characteristics may be so completely masked that the woman herself remains unaware of their existence.

But these two stages of consciousness, the naïve state and the sophisticated or ego state do not represent the psychological condition in all women. In the naïve state consciousness is diffuse, not clearly centred, and the natural impulses and instincts function unchecked by any development of individual conscious aims in the woman herself. In the sophisticated stage the individual aims of the woman, which in many cases may even go contrary to the natural impulses or biological aims, come to the fore and gradually dominate consciousness. In the third stage, both the natural impulses and the dominance of ego-power are superseded by a newly recognized value or object which the woman accepts as of greater worth and significance than either the biological urge or the impulse to acquire personal power and satisfaction. This may be called a supra-personal value or object, because it is accepted by the individual as being above personal needs and wishes thus claiming complete and unconditional allegiance.

Such a supra-personal value has been found by some in a dominating idea such as the ideal of Liberty or of Fraternity, or the Love of God, ideas which have claimed at times from men and women a devotion superseding the claims of their own biological and personal needs, superseding even the claims of family duty and love.

In all ages seers have recognized abstract ideas or principles as the supreme values in life, but before they can become powerful forces or motives for man in general, they have to

be demonstrated in a concrete situation. For example, liberty as an ideal can inspire a man like Lincoln, whose character was gradually redeemed from ambition and the desire for personal power and aggrandizement through the value which he saw in this idea. But before the average citizen of the United States could be moved by it, it had to be concretized in the actual endangering of the liberties of the Union. In a somewhat different but still comparable way, mystics have devoted their lives to an inner concept of God. Only when the inner truths men serve have been expressed in a religion which is a more or less concrete embodiment of their ideals, however, have the majority of men been stirred to enthusiasm.

But today these ideas have lost their old power of redemption, for the majority of people. We recognize this and from all sides comes the question, Is there some other object or aim which carries with it a similar value ? Or is it our doom to live and die under the dominance of the ego ? An intellectually chosen ideal, however worthy, cannot release us from the powerful forces of nature and the ego. An object or value which is to redeem us must have the power to release within us energies superior to those wielded by either sexuality or the ego. The solution is not to be found in a rational idealism, nor for most seekers is the solution to be found in the modern churches. Some people have found a solution for this modern problem through analytical psychology. Jung has shown that when a human being explores the hidden depths of his own psyche he finds primordial images, pictures of racial experience, archetypes, ancient powerful forces which have influenced his character and actions all unseen and unknown. His personal ego no longer dominates the scene, his personal satisfactions fade into relative insignificance, and he becomes aware for the



first time of the drama of inherited forces within himself. He realizes that the ego is no longer the centre of his psyche, the king of life. His consciousness enlarges and as the work of exploration proceeds and he strives for and attains a relationship to these inner figures, a new centre of consciousness gradually emerges. This is not a new ego — a kind of Super-I — for it includes racial and supra-personal trends which are not identical with the personal wishes and needs of the individual, though these also are represented. On the contrary, it has a non-personal quality which would prevent the individual from using the term "I" to express this new centre or Self. In this new Self may be found a supra-personal value which has for us moderns the power and validity which men in other times found through an ideal related to the external world or through the experience of a concretized religion.

On account of its subjective character the problem of a supra-personal value is a peculiarly difficult one to discuss intelligibly. It is not a question of any esoteric doctrine but only of the facts of psychological experience which I have observed sufficiently often to convince me of their validity. But when an inner psychological experience of a supra-personal value is to be discussed, there is difficulty in finding suitable terms; the language has necessarily to be metaphorical.

The majority of people get along perfectly well without making the effort to acquire a degree of consciousness beyond the ego stage. Psychologically those individuals who are well-adapted to this world and to their own environment live in a state of peace. Therefore this discussion of a supra-personal value may be, to them, incomprehensible. But for others who are, for whatever reason, mal-adapted, it is as though their Fatherland were threatened; they are com-

pelled to develop a new state of consciousness, to seek for a supra-personal value, just as the inhabitants of an invaded country have patriotism forced upon them.

A not inconsiderable number of the well-adapted whose experience of life is yet not satisfactory to them want something more than comfort, refinement, and amusement. To such people, as well as to the mal-adapted, comes the challenge to seek for themselves that spring of vitality which has been choked by our material civilization. They, too, like the inhabitants of an invaded country, must seek a value above their own personal aims if all is not to be lost. But as this is not a fact of personal experience for all my readers I shall leave the more theoretic aspect of the subject and content myself with describing briefly the observable effects that result from the substitution of a supra-personal value for those of the ego.

The anima-woman must find her supra-personal value not through an intellectually accepted ideal, but through a deeper experience of her own nature, which leads her into relation to the woman's spirituality, the feminine principle itself. Jung has used the old Greek philosophic concept of Eros or relatedness to express this feminine principle, in contrast to the Logos which is the masculine principle dealing with factual knowledge and wisdom.

In ordinary life examples of this substitution of a higher value for personal ones can be recognized, and the new psychological orientation which this implies is shown by a certain change which takes place in the woman's attitude.

Take, for example, the *femme inspiratrice*. She has been worshipped and adored by men. The good things of life come to her easily. She has been put on a pedestal and been considered almost divinely wise. Like the anima-woman in general, she is quite fluid, having few solid attitudes or points of consciousness of her own, which would only dis-

tort the reflection of the man's unconscious contents. She is like a deep pool of water which does but reflect what passes before it. The man sees in her, however, images and pictures of great definiteness and detail, much as one may see pictures in the clouds or in the fire. We recognize that the picture image does not exist as such in the plastic material, but that the many changing shapes and forms allow those things which are still in symbol form in the unconscious of the observer to become manifest to him. In a similar way a *femme inspiratrice*, through her plasticity and unconscious behaviour allows the man to see in her a reflection of his own unconscious thought forms. These are accessible to him only through the stirring of instinct aroused by his attraction to the woman. Usually men do not recognize that this is the case, but are deceived as to the part the woman plays in their inspiration. They ascribe to her a much more active rôle than she is, as a rule, capable of taking.

Certain women, however, who have advanced beyond the sophisticated stage are yet particularly well fitted for this rôle of *femme inspiratrice* on account of their own contact with the deeper things within them. Such a woman can lead a man whom she loves into touch with the hidden truths of life because of the reality of her own inner experience. She herself could not write the book or paint the picture which the man creates through his relation to her, but on account of her contact with her own inner truth, which is a truth of life and of relationship, she can open the gates for him. Such a woman is in a different category from one who is nothing but anima, for she gives of her Self, and is not playing a rôle in which her unconscious motive is to hold the man. She is a "redeemed" anima-woman — redeemed, that is, from the hold of her own biological instincts, on the one hand, and from self-seeking and egotistic motives, on the other.

But the *femme inspiratrice* who is just anima also plays an indispensable part in the man's inspiration. A man can rarely view his unconscious contents directly; they are only perceptible to him through phantasy or when they are projected into the objective world. Therefore, if a man finds them only in the woman, he needs the woman if he is to find them ! But truth demands that we recognize *what* part she plays, namely, whether she is an active agent or whether she is entirely passive, a mere reflector of his unconscious thoughts and, when left to herself, a creature destitute of all that he found through his association with her. To play this rôle, even successfully, may not indicate an inner development in the woman herself. It may be just one way of playing anima.

For many a woman there is a great lure in the thought of inspiring her man, of being his guardian angel, indispensable to him. I remember the case of a girl, of about fifteen, who was brought for analysis on account of her exceedingly unsatisfactory adaptation. She would not go to school or submit to any kind of discipline, but was running quite wild. An older man of some prominence in the artistic world was in love with her and the girl thought of herself as his inspiration and his guardian angel. He was of somewhat dissipated habits and she considered it her mission to reform him, so that, on the one hand, she was sprouting wings while, on the other, she was being a naughty little girl ! And yet the artist actually did find inspiration from his association with her. This might be all very well for the artist, but it was bound to spell ruin for a girl in such a position. For, instead of going on with her own education and development, she was reduced to being nothing but a psychological function of the man. She was limited to being his "soul," just as Eve was for Adam, instead of taking up her own task of becoming an individual woman in her own

right. An added element of danger is the probability that such a man will always require a *young* girl to play this part for him, so that in a very few years this particular girl will find herself replaced by another victim of his psychological need.

When a man has a relation with a woman who is to him *femme inspiratrice*, he gains from the relationship the inspiration to create. To him his creation is the child of his love for the woman. Often he expects her also to regard his work in this light. But, if she does so, her attention is directed to the *thing* and she comes to maintain her relationship to him *in order* to get a certain result. This is a power attitude. It means that she seeks her satisfaction at the wrong source. For to her the *relationship* is the child of her love — her creation — and in it she must seek her satisfaction and fulfilment, not in any “good” that may come out of it. For this value of relationship is her supra-personal value.

The substitution of a supra-personal value for those of the ego may be seen in certain women’s attitude towards dress. To the anima-woman dress is very important. She has to dress for the part that she is to play in every situation. It is not simply that she wants to dress becomingly. It is something more than this, even granted she has her share of natural vanity. Rather, it is as if she considers *herself* a work of art, which she will take infinite pains to make as perfect and as fully expressive of the inner meaning it is intended to convey as her material resources will allow. In other words, it is as though the anima-woman does not regard herself and her life experiences as belonging only to herself, but as though in some way they have a general or collective significance which demands for their every expression her greatest care and attention. This is just what the artist feels about his product. It represents his own personal experience of life, but by his art he raises it from

the merely personal into a form which expresses general or even universal truth.

This capacity to generalize her emotions may be exploited by the ego, for such a generalization allows many women to express, or to portray falsely, an emotion which they do not really feel but which is calculated to catch the projection of the man's anima by its very generalization. We see such a dramatization in the case of a woman who may play to perfection the rôle of the bereaved widow, even when those who know her intimately realize that far from being desolated, she is really relieved at the death of a husband whom she did not love. We see her dressed in deep, but not ostentatious, mourning; her cheeks pale with powder if not with anxiety; her eyes large with unshed tears; her manner gentle, yet dignified — so brave, so sweet, so to be pitied ! Perhaps the whole thing is unconscious. Possibly she is just playing the rôle of widow, as she conceives it should be played. Or it may be that she is more sophisticated. She may have her attention fixed entirely on an impression which she wishes to produce in a particular quarter and which with consummate skill she brings to pass.

But it is not only in her clothes that the anima-woman dresses for a part. She very frequently makes up her face according to an accepted mode. Her lips are painted to a stiff, conventional cupid's bow; her eyebrows are shaved to a particular width and curve; her eyes are darkened, her hair is tinted and dressed, again according to a mode. It is almost as though she wears a mask. She takes great pains to eradicate or to disguise all individual marks, both in features and in expression, and to present to the world only a collective mask, which does not vary with the coming and going of her actual feelings, but only according to her conception of what the situation requires. This also, in its

simplest form, is done in order to express that part of her personality which is universal or collective, and in its less naïve form is done in order to catch the projection of the man's anima which is always generalized or collective.

The anima-woman carries her acting even beyond this point. Not only is her dress a work of art; not only is her version, so to say, of her own face an artistic creation, but (the conviction is forced upon one) her presentation of her emotions is also, as Jung once said of her tears, purposive. Her laughter, her tears, her facial expression, the tones of her voice all seem to be directed towards an end. The woman herself may be completely unconscious of this orientation, or she may be dimly aware that "now is the time to cry." The more difficult and tragic the circumstances of a coming interview may be, the more careful is her selection of exactly the right dress and make-up. She always has one eye on effect. She always has to act her emotion — to make of it a work of art. She never completely *has* her own experience unless by presenting the picture of it to others she receives it again through their response.

Women who are developed on the individual side despise such arts and wiles. Possibly the indifference to dress which many of these women display comes from a reaction against the dramatization so characteristic of the anima type. The dramatization comes from an unconscious mechanism and is a reaction of female to male. While this may not be apparent to men, women, of whatever type, are quite aware of the unreality of the action, and the more frank and outspoken among them are naturally repelled and refuse to have anything to do with what seems to them deception. In discarding these arts, however, they perhaps throw out the wheat with the chaff, for the tendency to play a part is quite instinctive and is related also to the carrying of the

projection of the man's anima. Since this performs a very important function, both biologically and psychologically, we must ask what is the deeper significance and value of the woman's dramatization ?

May it not be that the woman is compelled to dress for the part, and to act it, in order to find the inner meaning of her own experience ? Perhaps she can only consciously *get* the thing that lives in her through observing her own gestures and instinctive acts. Kipling reports that when Riki-Tiki-Tavi, the mongoose, first saw a cobra he felt that his eyes were red and *so* knew that he was angry. Similarly, it is only when a woman finds herself instinctively doing certain things, that she realizes what it is that is within her. Often women have said to me, "I found the tears running down my cheeks, and so I knew that what he said hurt me badly." To so great an extent woman *is* instinct ! Her actions, her gestures, her words, may all voice or embody instinct, femininity. If she will only let herself act uncensored, then she can observe in herself, in her own actions, the working of pure nature. It is as though she herself is her own work of art, which she creates by working with the plastic materials of her own life, often towards ends which she does not as yet comprehend. And by a kind of after-thought she is enabled to discern, through viewing her actions objectively what it was that Life wanted of her. Psychological development takes place when she looks at herself in this objective way and so comes to understand the deeper aspects of her own nature and incorporates them consciously into the totality of her character and attitude. This is by no means an easy thing to do, for it makes the woman herself her own "animal of experiment." However, if she allows these quite instinctual things to take their course, she may find something functioning within her which is intrinsic to her and yet is not her personal ego.



The second-century Gnostics had a text in their books\* which bears on this way of experiencing oneself: "Learn whence is sorrow and joy, and love and hate, and waking though one would not, and sleeping though one would not, and getting angry though one would not, and falling in love though one would not. And if thou shouldst closely investigate these things, thou wilt find *Him* in thyself, one and many, just as the atom; thus finding from thyself a way out of thyself."

If a woman seeks for consciousness by this route she will find two major difficulties to be overcome. First, the instinctive things which spontaneously occur to her to do may not correspond to her own idea of herself or to the attitude to life which she has consciously taken. A conflict will then inevitably arise within her and, if she is not to repress the instinctual side once more, she will find it essential to change her attitude; she may be even compelled to admit that she has been mistaken in her estimate of herself — an admission no one likes to make.

The second difficulty lies in the very real danger that the woman may drop back into being "just nature" once more. This danger is imminent and ever-present, since she has so recently climbed out from her instinctual state. This step was accomplished, moreover, only through a revulsion of feeling against the old ways, and a fear of a relapse to that old state is betrayed by a tendency towards rigidity in her new attitude. It is impossible to go back as though the change had never been. She has gained a degree of consciousness; a going back would be a regression; she cannot achieve again the innocence of the child. When Adam and Eve were driven out from the garden because of their new consciousness of good and evil, born from eating of the tree of knowl-

\* Mead, G. R. S., *Fragments of a Faith Forgotten*, p. 223. London and Benares Theosophical Publishing Company, London, 1906.

edge, an angel with a fiery sword was placed before the gate to prevent their going back. That sword is still there, and a woman who has achieved a certain degree of consciousness cannot go back to the stage of the naïve anima-woman; the regression would inevitably lead her to licentiousness. Nevertheless, she has to beware of an excessive rigidity. If she is to gain a position of balance through a wider consciousness of both sides of her nature, she must let her instinct — for instance, the instinct to play a part — show itself, while at the same time she reminds herself continuously, "This is not all." A remarkable expression of this double need occurred once in a woman's dream where it was said to her, "Let us live strongly and devotedly whatever comes, and afterwards let us analyse it." By this means she can become aware of the deeper workings of instinct within herself, and yet not lose touch with her conscious attitude.

What then is the significance, psychologically speaking, of the anima rôle which women play? For the man, to find and love a woman who bears for him the symbol of his soul, whose qualities reflect his unconscious feminine side, is, potentially, an experience of deep spiritual significance, holding for him the possibility of development through the integration of parts of his psyche which were previously unrealized. For the woman who carries this symbol, however, the subjective experience is necessarily very different. Its value for her lies in evoking and tending the man's interest — his love. The richer and more creative parts of her own feminine nature lie deeply buried within her, hidden even from herself. It is almost as though another woman (is this other woman perhaps Mother Nature herself?) lies sleeping within her, inaccessible except as she may be quickened into life by the man, as Brünnhilde was awakened by Siegfried's kiss. The man is more aware of the flow of his energy, that is, of his libido than the woman is; she is always

a little indefinite, a little vague and unfocussed. But he does not experience instinct (nature) in himself, as the woman must. Yet this experiencing of nature is revivifying like a plunge into the ocean from which all life arises. If a man is to reach these hidden depths, it must be by awakening Nature in the woman through his love. His instinctual libido flows out. He is aware of it primarily as an outflowing, a searching for a home outside himself. No wonder that he desires and loves a woman who can satisfy this longing. But the woman is nearly always a little aloof from the situation. She lives *in herself* away from him. She finds life, it is true, because of his interest in her; it is this which wakes life in her, yet she lives it *in herself*.

Anima-women who are still in either the naïve or the sophisticated stage of development, often show this aloofness and preoccupation with themselves and their own reactions. With them it is an auto-erotic manifestation. This is so because the woman uses the man's anima projection and his consequent interest in her for her own pleasure and satisfaction. Certain women even deliberately act the rôle of anima in order to catch the man's projection and exploit it for their own benefit. But the aloofness of the woman is not necessarily auto-erotic. In Eugene O'Neill's play *The Great God Brown*, the characters all have masks which they put on whenever they dare not show their real selves. Sibyl, the harlot, has such a mask, which is painted like the conventional anima-woman. But she, in her real self, is something greater than she appears to be. She wears her mask less and less frequently as the play proceeds, for she lives in such a relation to her own instinct that she is able to draw out and cherish the best that each man has in him. She accepts his libido and cares for it, but she never tries to possess or exploit it. She is related to something deeper than the ego and its satisfactions. Her devotion is given to

some greater value that she senses in life, and as a result no one needs to wear a mask when he is with her, but can show himself for what he really is. Such an attitude brings for the woman redemption from the overwhelming power of nature on the one hand, and from the dominance of the ego on the other. To attain such an attitude requires from her a recognition that she does not possess the man's libido, but that it is, as it were, lent to her in trust and when the time comes she must return it to him. Her own gain comes, not through possessing the man's libido, but through giving herself to the deeper significance of life and truth made available through the emotional experience. Thus a value which she estimates as above any personal gain or satisfaction comes to hold the central place for her, and redemption of her personality is brought about through the recognition of a supra-personal value.

There is another way in which a woman may be redeemed from the bondage of instinct and of the ego, namely, through a worked-out relationship with a man. If the woman falls in love with the man who has projected his anima to her, she is no longer aloof and indifferent. The projection of her animus is caught by him. She, as well as he, is under an inner obligation to get in touch with her soul. She can no longer play unscathed in a situation which may well be a matter of life and death to him, for she also is involved. However little the situation may be to her liking, she is compelled to come back to him over and over again and to try to work out the difficulties between them. By this means reality can gradually be made to replace the illusion of the animus and anima projections, a process which involves psychological development and an extension of consciousness through the assimilation of that unconscious side of the psyche which previously lived in the projected animus or anima. In this case the value that is super-ordinated to the

personal wishes and satisfactions is (I hesitate to use that much abused word, love) the conscious relationship.

The coming of a supra-personal value changes the very nature of the experience of life for the individual. While personal motives ruled, the life was lived under the pleasure-pain principle. Happiness and personal satisfaction were the aims of life. To some happiness was interpreted in a purely selfish way, perhaps even on an animal plane. To others, more developed and more cultured, these aims involved a more refined, more æsthetic, even more altruistic way of life; but still, in the final analysis, that was good which gave pleasure, and that was bad which caused pain. When, however, a value arises which is above the personal level this standard of appraisal is overstepped. Pleasure and pain, realities though they undoubtedly are, become relative. What is pleasurable when regarded from the personal point of view may be neither good nor desirable when viewed from a different standpoint. And pain may cease to be an unmitigated evil when it is realized as a necessary step in attaining a value which is greater than the personal loss involved. For the sake of an inner relation to the spring of life or for the sake of gaining consciousness and reality in a relationship, a woman may, indeed, be content to accept pain, nay further, she may even be willing to go voluntarily to meet pain and perhaps to inflict it on a loved one if, by taking the painful course, truth may be served. In this way what is evil on the personal level may minister to what is good on the supra-personal plane.

Thus we see that instinctual libido which arises from the hidden depths of human nature is, at first, just one of the manifestations of nature forces; it has nothing of individuality about it. Presently, when the ego arises, this nature force may be brought up to consciousness and held there

under the dominance of the ego. But later a further step in consciousness may be taken. This happens either when the woman becomes aware of a value which transcends her ego and to which she voluntarily submits herself, or when she gets caught into life by falling in love and being obliged through a binding relationship to work on the difficulties and problems that arise between herself and her lover. In either case, a step may be taken which results in a deeper and broader consciousness and the emergence of an individuality out of the welter of collective and personal impulses which have been until now her sole motivation.

---

## CHAPTER II

### THE GHOSTLY LOVER

TO BE "in love" with a man is more than to "love" him. The state of being in love carries with it a certain element of compulsion, and one who is in love, however enraptured he may be, is certainly not free. Love is proverbially blind. Indeed, a girl may be in love with a man whom, in the absence of the glamour resulting from her state of mind, she might find not even likable or attractive. The glamour and attraction are effects produced by forces in her unconscious which have been stirred to activity through her contact with the man. She projects onto him some important element from her unconscious and then is attracted, or repelled, by that which she sees in him, quite unaware that it has originated deep within her own psyche. It is her masculine soul, her animus, which she has projected. This mechanism is the exact equivalent of the projection of the man's feminine soul, or anima, which formed the subject of the last chapter. When a woman is in love, we can either say that she *loves*, that is, she is active, or we can put it the other way round and say that she is attracted, that is, she is passive. In other words, her animus projected to the outside world draws her irresistibly. Regardless of whether the man loves her or not, the fascination makes it appear as though he were the active party — as though *he* loved her. From her subjective point of view, it seems to her that she is attracted from without, while in reality the thing which attracts her is from *within* — in her unconscious.

The possibility of this occurrence is occasionally shown in a play or novel where the girl is portrayed as having a lover who is not of this world, but belongs, instead, to the spirit or ghost world. This was the case in the old Jewish legend of the Dybbuk, which was made the subject of a drama by Solomon Rappaport, and played both in Yiddish and in English.

In this legend the lover who lures his beloved away from reality into union with himself is shown quite objectively as the ghost of a dead youth with whom the heroine was in love. In certain scenes in the play the girl is represented as possessed by the ghost; he enters into her and takes possession of her and she is shown to be temporarily insane, which is to say, she is suffering from a psychological illness. In these scenes there is no objective reality of the ghost, but the ghost lives none the less as a subjective reality in the girl's psyche. She is entirely absorbed in him and by him. She is lost to the real world about her, for she is living only in her own subjective world with her ghostly lover.

In another recent play, Eugene O'Neill's *Strange Interlude*, the same subject is dwelt upon. But here the ghost does not appear at all; his presence must be inferred from the effects he has upon his lover-victim, that is, he appears *only* as a subjective factor in the girl's psychology. The heroine had been in love with a young soldier, an airman, and when he is killed in the war she, as it were, loses her soul and, as a result, can give nothing of her real self to her life. She marries and is loved by many men, but her devotion always goes to her lost lover.

In both instances the lover is portrayed as the ghost, or as the still-living influence of an actual man with whom the heroine had had a real relationship, however slender and frustrated it may have been. This influence which affects the woman as though it came from the action or desire of



a man, when the truth is he is inactive or, perhaps, dead, or may never have existed as an objective reality, must be a subjective effect within the woman's psyche—hence the term, Ghostly Lover. Manifestations of a ghostly lover may occur not only as the ghost of a real man, but also in cases where an actual flesh-and-blood lover has never been in the picture. We may see instances of this in real life as well as in plays and novels. Barrie has shown the situation very clearly in his play *Mary Rose*, where Mary Rose is lured away from her husband and child by strange music to the Island-that-wants-to-be-visited. This is a not unusual retreat which one frequently comes upon in the subjective life of real people. I have known many people who have built up an elaborate phantasy island or castle to which they retire when life is dull or difficult. Here they often spend endless time and energy constructing in phantasy a world more to their liking than the humdrum one to which they find it so hard to adapt. They "rebuild the world nearer to the Heart's desire." A phantasy world where all is as one wishes is enormously alluring and exerts a fascination calling one away from reality, it becomes increasingly hard to resist the more it is indulged in. This, also, is the work of the Ghostly Lover.

In talking about the Ghostly Lover we are not dealing with something which is remote or unusual or which occurs only in abnormal or pathological conditions. On the contrary, the Ghostly Lover, in his psychological, or subjective, aspect is a living reality to every woman. He holds his power and exerts his lure because he is a psychological entity, part of that conglomerate of autonomous, or relatively autonomous, factors which make up her psyche. As he is a part of her so she is bound to him; she *must* find him and consciously assimilate him if she is not to suffer the pain and distress of disintegration. For he is her soul mate, her "other

half," the invisible companion who accompanies her throughout life. Jung has named this soul-figure of the woman *animus*. The animus is the equivalent of the man's anima, but the two figures differ markedly in their characteristics and in their manifestations.\*

The term, Ghostly Lover, has been devised to denote the destructive aspect of the animus, but it must be borne in mind that this is only one aspect, for he does not always function destructively. As *Ghostly Lover* he *always* acts as one who lures his victim away from reality by promises of bliss in another world. In the woman's psychology he is the counterpart of the Siren in the man's. In the man's psychology, as in mythology, the Siren by her music and charm lures the man to a watery grave. The Ghostly Lover, by the promise of untold bliss, entices the woman to seek his arms in the air.

The Ghostly Lover, however, is not merely an abstraction of the psychologist; he is manifested in actual, everyday life. In the first two of the plays mentioned above, the Ghostly Lover is personified and acts his part, a dominating one, as do the other persons in the play. He appears as a reality with power to act independently and autonomously. His psychological connection with the woman whose animus he represents is clearly shown by the curious and almost magical bond between them. In this way is expressed the autonomy of the animus, composed as he is of psychological contents of which the woman is unaware or over which her conscious ego exerts no control, for they belong to her unconscious. If she should become aware of these psychological contents, she would be in a position to dissolve the personification of the animus and thus to divest it of its power while she would

\* For a further discussion of this subject the reader is referred to C. G. Jung's essay, "Anima and Animus," in *Two Essays on Analytical Psychology*, Dodd, Mead & Company, 1928.

be released from the "magical" influence which the Ghostly Lover previously wielded.

The form of presentation in the plays is the result of the intuitive perception of the artist, who actually perceives the various psychological tendencies of his characters in personified form, as though they were separate people. In his artistic product he shares with us, the audience, the fruits of his insight, but — and here is a strange fact — he may not know himself that the characters he depicts are psychological tendencies and complexes. He himself may take the play as being a simple narration of objective fact. In much the same way, in real life the Ghostly Lover is occasionally personified in the memory of a dead or an absent lover. More often it happens that in consciousness he is not personified; the woman victim herself does not know it is a ghostly lover who calls her away from reality to an unreal world, although in these cases, her unconscious material, her dreams and daytime phantasies, show clearly the real situation. In either case, however, when the Ghostly Lover calls and the woman follows she disappears, as it were, from reality much as Mary Rose did. To those about her she becomes vague, falls into a brown study, is perhaps cross or irritable; or she may wear a baffling or propitiatory smile. To herself it seems that she has become absorbed in an inner experience of great beauty and value which she cannot by any means share with another. At a moment when she is actually trying to share her inner experience with a friend such a mood may overtake her; and not realizing how vague and meaningless her remarks have become, it may seem to her that her friend is unsympathetic or willfully misunderstands.

Sometimes such a mood is associated with thoughts of an actual, absent or dead friend. I recall a woman who wore black for twenty years for a man to whom she had refused

to become engaged while he was living. She used this man as an absolute shield between herself and all reality. On the yearly anniversary of his death her friends sent her flowers. Because of the grief she was still supposedly suffering for his loss, she managed to get herself excused from making even the ordinary efforts towards friendship that society demands. Her attitude to life asserted that she was sad, bereaved, and must be carried by her circle of acquaintances for the rest of her life.

In another instance a woman suddenly widowed refused to weep for her husband. She felt that he had merely disappeared for a moment and was not really dead. She felt too that this attitude was in some way very noble and brave, and her friends sustained her in it by their comments on her wonderful courage. She did what was necessary towards readjusting to the outer world, but she held secretly to her phantasy that her husband was still alive and made no inner readjustment. Her attitude influenced her children who lost their old ability to make friends. Gradually their lives began to sink into emptiness, a kind of vacuum in which their mother existed. Meantime, she lived in the thought of her husband; her eyes held a curiously vacant, yet expectant, look, for to her he was still alive and might appear at any moment. One day, when she was half asleep, she thought he was standing by her. Throughout the rest of the day she went through the motions of living, but she wore a strange smile and was apparently far away. Again he came to her, and again and again. Sometimes she caught a glimpse of him, but more often she was merely overwhelmingly aware of his nearness. Gradually he seemed to grow bolder, until she came to have the feeling, when she looked up suddenly at almost any time, that he had only that instant stepped out of sight. At this point she became frightened, began to wonder if she were going insane or

were really seeing a ghost. On psychological investigation the "ghost" proved to be "Ghostly Lover," that is, the appearance arose from the projection of the woman's animus, which in the absence of her dearly loved husband had become personified as it were in space. The condition cleared up completely under psychological treatment.

The idea of the Ghostly or Spiritual Lover is not a new one. Religious mystics of all ages and creeds — the Sufis, the Shaktas, the Christian Mystics — have all sought for union with a Divine Lover. Rabia, the Islamic woman mystic, knew God as the Divine Lover, the Beloved of her Soul, as did St. Bernard of Clairvaux, while many women saints of mediæval Christianity tell us that their religious experience was of God as a Lover. Even today when a nun takes the veil, she is dedicated to this Divine Lover. She wears the bridal veil and is given a ring, as the Bride of Christ.

Religious experiences of this sort have been highly valued not only among Christians but also with peoples of other religions, such as Mohammedans, Buddhists, and Hindoos. Individuals having them have been regarded as saints, possessing a wisdom different in character from the wisdom to be gained by knowledge of the world and having achieved a development of character which makes them in very truth superior human beings.

We can hardly dismiss as hysterical nonsense all the evidence concerned with these religious experiences, nor can we say that it is entirely in the nature of unreal phantasy, as in the case of Mary Rose. How much of it is of that nature, it is hard to say. Undoubtedly there are many who "have professed religion" as a means of escaping from the burdens and difficulties of life in the world. The inner experience of such people would, in all probability, be of a lover who lured them away from the world of reality into a dream world. In other words, if anyone chooses a life of seclu-

sion and introversion as an escape from the difficulties of life, he must expect to get lost in that inner world where as many difficulties and dangers await the adventurer as beset the explorer of the outer world. Indeed, the outer world is safe and protected compared with the inner world of the unconscious. But the pseudo-adventurers do not represent all who have explored the inner world.

Since the fifteenth century, adventurous souls have exercised their courage and audacity in exploring the unknown parts of the earth so thoroughly that today, except for parts of the polar caps and some yet inaccessible mountain peaks, they have rounded the earth. The Everest expeditions and the Byrd adventure foreshadow man's complete conquest of the globe. In two remaining spheres, however, man is setting himself a further task of exploration. In the realm of the air fearless and undaunted young men are setting out on ever more daring enterprises; and in the sphere of the inner life, with less advertisement and general talk, other men and women, no less courageous, are setting out on the adventure of exploring the hidden world that lies behind consciousness. But in this inner world as in the outer, the adventurer who travels without knowledge or experience or true seriousness of purpose goes forward only to his own undoing. For nature knows no pity. If one goes to the polar regions without due preparation, merely to escape from some difficulty in life, he will inevitably meet with a most unpleasant awakening. In just the same way, if one seeks the inner world in order to escape from life's tasks he will without doubt be overwhelmed and will perish. A similar fate will overtake anyone who chooses a religious life of contemplation as a means of escape from life's tasks. It is the purpose that counts. For instance, to take up the religious life of contemplation as a means of escape from life's burdens is not to experience God, but rather to fall into the uncon-

scious and gradually be swallowed up. The visions or phantasies that come to such a man will be of a very different character from those of the true mystic and will not stand the test of analysis. The Church has always been careful to differentiate between the two and to warn against false religious experiences.

Milarepa, a great yogi and teacher, who lived in Thibet during the end of the eleventh and the beginning of the twelfth centuries, also warned his disciples to differentiate between the true and the false experience. In his last discourse to his pupils he said:

The true dawning of the Voidness in one's mind  
And illusory obsessions of the Consciousness,  
Appear to be alike, but beware, and confuse them not.

The knowing of the Pure, the Unalloyed State, by meditation,  
And the fondness for the Tranquil State born of the trance  
ecstatic of Quiescence  
Appear to be alike, but beware and confuse them not.

The Flood-tide of the Deep of Intuition,  
And other deep convictions that "This seemeth right," "That  
seemeth true,"  
Appear to be alike, but beware, and confuse them not.

The clear perception of the Mind Unmodified,  
And the noble impulse to serve others,  
Appear to be alike, but beware, and confuse them not.

The spiritual boon which shineth on one as resultant of Connected Causes,  
And merit temporal, which bringeth much of worldly goods,  
Appear alike, but beware, and confuse them not.\*

So we see that inner phantasies and visions, daydreams and religious experiences, fall into two groups which, as Milarepa

\* Evans-Wentz, W. Y., *Thibet's Great Yogi, Milarepa*, p. 298. Oxford University Press, 1928.

says, "appear to be alike" and yet are so different in their results that while one leads to the greatest unreality and, indeed, is to be seen at the point of its fullest development in lunatic asylums, the other is a true and valid experience of an inner reality which is as "real" and as powerful as any external reality.

This statement will meet with scepticism, I am sure, or even frank ridicule from some of my readers. To many the phenomena of the outer world with their direct appeal to the senses constitute the only reality. Unless a thing can be seen and felt and handled, it is for them ephemeral and unreal. Yet even such concrete-minded and practical people are compelled to recognize the existence of many unseen and impalpable forces which manifest themselves in the material world. Electricity cannot be seen; radio waves are invisible. Yet their reality has been demonstrated beyond any question by their effects in the world. These are physical forces, but there are also psychological forces which by their manifestations in the concrete world convince us in exactly the same way of their reality. For example, fear, for no external reason, may take hold of a crowd, and a panic develop. Or an idea originating with one or two individuals may spread through whole nations with far-reaching results. Christianity is an outstanding example of an idea which swept through the world. The religious experience felt at first by a few affected the lives of many, as a result European civilization and culture were entirely changed.

But the concrete-minded man always tends to discount such things; he characterizes the inner experience of one to whom such things are the *great* reality as idle phantasies or repressed instincts. A psychologist once asserted that all mystical experiences arose from repressed sexuality and challenged any mystic to lay bare his inner experiences, asserting that he could prove, even to a mystic, the sexual origin of



every mystical "reality." I know of no mystic who took up the challenge, which is hardly to be wondered at. To the concrete-minded man all inner experience is of the nature of phantasy, vapourings, wish-fulfilments, or is a sort of illness of which a man can be *cured* by bringing his interest into the "reality" of the external world.

On the other hand, the man whose chief orientation is to the inner world of thought and of the spirit tends to depreciate the external world and to over-appreciate the inner experiences. He also needs Milarepa's warning. Just as the concrete-minded man confuses the true with the false and says that all inner experiences are "silly and wasteful," so the man with inner vision tends to confuse the true with the false and to say that *all* his phantasies are "beautiful and significant." Each attitude is biased and leads to a one-sided and unstable position. How can we follow Milarepa's advice and "beware and confuse them not" ?

The first step in making such a discrimination is to examine the data more closely and determine what the actual experience of the Ghostly, or Divine, Lover is. The experience of the Ghostly Lover is an inner or subjective one. Whether we conceive of the lover as being the woman's animus, her masculine soul, or whether we conceive of the Divine Lover as God, in either case he may be perceived by her as a being outside her conscious personality, and yet he is one with whom she can have converse only subjectively, that is to say, within herself. Even where, as in the case quoted above, there is an hallucination of an external presence or, as in the cases which we shall shortly consider, where an actual man carries the values of the Ghostly Lover, it is still possible in every case to demonstrate the subjective or psychological character of the energy which the Ghostly Lover wields.

The inner experience may be perceived in various ways.

It may be experienced as a *mood*, either with or without conscious content and phantasy pictures; or as a *projection* in the outer world, when some actual person or circumstance is endowed with the meaning and value of the inner experience; or as a *dream* or *vision*, which may form the basis for an artistic or some other creative product. The mood, the projection, or the vision represents the part of the experience which is perceived in consciousness, while beyond this there may — almost certainly will — also be phenomena, dreams or phantasies, appearing from the unconscious, which will show the situation viewed, as it were, from the other side. For instance, I have known more than one case where a woman, retreating from life into her subjective moods, has dreamed of an airman flying overhead. In the typical dream he comes close to the ground and the dreamer catches hold of a part of the airplane and is carried up and away like the tail of a kite. I say this is a typical dream for I have met with it repeatedly in patients who are being caught away from life into the unconscious.

Phantasies with an emotional tone which bring their own satisfaction are a normal part of psychological life. Only when the preoccupation with this phantasy material withdraws attention from the world of reality does it become a menace. In particular, phantasies and visions of an imaginary lover play a necessary part in the psychological changes of puberty.

Lo as some innocent and eager maiden  
Leans o'er the wistful limit of the world,  
Dreams of the glow and glory of the distance,  
Wonderful wooing and the grace of tears,  
Dreams with what eyes and what a sweet insistence  
Lovers are waiting in the hidden years.\*

\* Myers, F. W. H., *St. Paul*. Macmillan & Company, London, 1910.

But this absorption with the dream of love should be a passing phase, giving place to the interests and activities of real friendships. Frequently, however, girls show a tendency to cling to such phantasies. Where outer contacts are not easily made or where an incipient attachment is checked by external difficulties, we often find the young girl retreating to the world of dreams where the suitor is more to her liking and plays his rôle more as she would have it played. Here we have the birth of the Ghostly Lover. Such a phantasy inevitably stands between the girl and all the boys and men whom she meets. It is as though her acquaintances have an unseen rival whom they must surpass before they can hope to win her attention. As time goes on the developing woman may forget her phantasy; the Ghostly Lover falls into the unconscious; and she occupies herself with her life tasks and thinks no more about her girlhood dreams. But that does not mean that her problem is solved. The Ghostly Lover falls into the unconscious. He is not conquered or dispossessed. He is still the "Beau Ideal," the "Prince Charming," before whose attractions all other men pale into insignificance. He is invisible, but his presence can be inferred from the reactions of the woman who possesses him or, rather, who is possessed by him. She will have what appears to the onlooker to be a perfectly arbitrary standard by which she judges every man she meets. She will say, "Oh yes, he's a nice enough fellow, but I like tall men" or fair men or dark men or thin men or what not. Or, making her judgement from the head, she will say, "He is too intellectual," or, "He hasn't any ideas."

This "opinionating" is not to be confused with a real judgement based on external facts. It is true that in certain cases a man may be so occupied with his intellectual life that he has nothing to put into a relationship with a woman. But

the falsity in the case I am considering rests in the *a priori* nature of the judgement that allows nothing to the situation. It is not that the woman has tried to find values in the relationship and failed, but that by her *a priori* judgement she blots out the man in one stroke. If a woman makes a critical atmosphere in the beginning, the man will certainly hesitate to leave his own masculine sphere where he feels himself secure. In the realm of feeling, which is properly the woman's world, a man tends to feel hesitant, rather at a disadvantage, and if the woman's attitude is critical, he is forced over to the intellectual side and is prevented from functioning on any but the most impersonal basis.

This unseen hero may show himself only through the woman's depreciation of real men. But this depreciation is proof of his presence in her unconscious as a criterion. He holds for the woman such overwhelming values that all other men pale in comparison. The trouble is that the values of the Ghostly Lover in such a form are unrealizable, for he remains only an "impossible possibility." The woman cannot bring these values into life through a living relation to the man, for he only exists in her unconscious, nor, while he thus keeps her from life, can she obtain his values in any other way. An actual case may serve to illustrate this point. A certain woman had become interested in a man whom she knew only slightly. He represented for her the unknown hero, although he actually did not come up to her expectation nor act in the way she wanted. She met him one day at a reception and sat and talked with him for some time. When she got home she found herself much depressed and filled with a vague dissatisfaction. She could not understand her own mood because outwardly the situation had gone very well, even though up to that time the man had shown no disposition to play the part she wished. That night she dreamed that she was ironing a sleeve. Inside the

sleeve, instead of the ironing board, there was a little wooden egg such as is used for darning stockings. Her associations to the dream were illuminating. She said that the sleeve is used metaphorically in the term to "have something up your sleeve," while an egg is a possibility. We say, for instance, "Don't count your chickens before they are hatched." But this egg is a *wooden* egg, it can never hatch. It may be used perhaps as a nest egg to induce the hen to lay a real egg, but it itself is hard and uncompromising. It is a rigidly held "possibility" that is in fact no possibility at all! The woman had in her talk with the man unconsciously tried to coerce the situation into being what she wanted it to be with the result that the life had been sucked out of the real living possibilities which were inherent in the situation, while she had substituted a wooden egg which she had kept up her sleeve.

In this situation, the possibility which was held as a rigid demand on life was the work of the Ghostly Lover. But the example serves also as an introduction to the next form in which the hero in the unconscious may show himself. Unconscious contents have a great tendency to be projected to the outer world, where they fasten onto any convenient carrier who presents a suitable hook. When this occurs the mantle of Prince Charming falls upon some man in the outer world and the woman falls violently under the spell of this current incarnation of the prince. The nature of the spell varies. She may project intellectual values and find a Great Teacher; she may project erotic values and find her Beau Ideal.

In the first chapter the projection of the values of the man's anima and the nature of his involvement with the woman who carried these values for him were discussed at length. When the woman's soul, or animus, is projected, in a similar way, it is as though the values of the animus were

"transferred" to the man. The emotional involvement which results is spoken of as a "transference." A transference of this variety may occur in widely different circumstances. The amount of reality underlying it may vary from a mere nothing up to an intimacy that ends in marriage. But if the attraction, the charm, the spell, in each case is the result of a projection of the values of the Ghostly Lover, the result will be a situation which is not based on reality, with a consequent liability to crumbling and disillusion.

This is the nature of the transferences which women and girls so often make to heroes in books and plays, to popular preachers, to movie stars, or, indeed, to "men of reality." Take, for example, the "hero-worship" of Rudolph Valentino and Colonel Lindbergh. Probably not one of the thousands of women who flocked to the lying in state of Rudolph Valentino had ever even so much as exchanged one word with him. The same may be said of those who have been in love with "Lindy." To them their hero is a symbol; it is the man's action, his rôle, which appeals to his admirers, not primarily the man himself. We might, indeed, infer this from the fact that so many women are attracted by the *same* man. Love based on a reality-relatedness is more discriminating. If either a man or a woman is *generally* attractive to the other sex (attractive, I mean, in a general or universal way) we may well suspect that this factor of the projection of the Ghostly Lover (of the animus or anima) enters into the situation. Certain men and women lend themselves to this kind of transference. Sometimes the effect is produced by the rôle that the man actually plays, as, for instance, in the case of Valentino. He acted the part of the hero in many a movie drama and it was in the guise of hero that he appeared to his devoted admirers. It was as though Prince Charming had, indeed, taken on flesh and blood, and every girl who saw his films

could identify herself with the heroine of the play and so feel him in very truth her lover. In the case of "Lindy" the mechanism is a little different. He lives in a reality world, not a movie world. His deeds of daring are accomplished amid the stern realities of life, not in the safety of a studio. But here again his profession renders him particularly susceptible to the transference of the woman's animus.

Jung, in *The Secret of the Golden Flower*, speaks of the anima as the Earth Spirit, while the animus is the Air Spirit. In accordance with this we find that men are attracted by the Siren, the woman who is half fish living in the depths of the water, or by the Earth Spirit, who lives deep within the earth. For instance, Ulysses was lured by the Sirens, and Tannhäuser by Venus, who is represented in the legend as living in the Venusberg, a mountain in the depths of the earth. While, in contrast, women are caught up into the air by the Ghostly Lover. The Flying Dutchman was such a Ghostly Lover to Senta. In Eugene O'Neill's *Strange Interlude*, it was an airman who became Nina's Ghostly Lover. In *Lohengrin* a rather different aspect of the animus is shown. For Lohengrin is the spiritual, or sky, animus who comes on the swan to aid Elsa in her extremity. He does not carry her away with him, but he disappears when she doubts him, showing that it is the woman's attitude which has power to convert the Ghostly Lover into Spiritual Animus. Then, if her attitude becomes tinged with power motives, he degenerates again into the Ghostly Lover from which he evolved. To the woman her animus is up in the air; if she goes with him, it is to meet him in realms above the earth, and we feel of her that she is "all up in the air." Hence it is that a man who conquers the air, a flying man, is a particularly appropriate holder of this kind of animus transference.

In this recent hero-worship of Valentino and Lindbergh

we have examples of a transference made by many women to a man of renown where the reality contact is practically nil and the attraction arises only from the rôle played by the hero. When, however, a man or woman in ordinary life regularly attracts admiration or love from a large number of people, it is not so easy to see what the situation really is. There are doubtless men and women who are lovable in themselves and who, by their very good qualities, attract the transference of their whole circle. If they express themselves clearly and show their preferences plainly, however, matters generally right themselves and the disappointed among their admirers can go their way without permanently broken hearts. The trouble comes when such generally attractive people are unwilling or unable to show what they really are like, and assume the rôle that the admiring circle would impose upon them. Such an assumption of a rôle may be completely unconscious or it may be a partly conscious pose. In Gilbert and Sullivan's *Patience* we have an excellent caricature of the sort of situation that arises when a pose is assumed in this way. Here the young man who poses as the Fleshly Poet, on the one hand, and the one who assumes the rôle of the Æsthetic Poet, on the other, catch in turn the transference of all the young ladies of the chorus. The method by which this illusion can be resolved in real life is shown in the play. The young man who hides his own reality continues to be caught in the rôle, the fact that he deliberately acts a part for his own ends does not prevent his imprisonment. The other who clearly expresses himself and his own position declaring that he loves *Patience* and no one else, is released from his embarrassing situation and the other young ladies are promptly cured of their love sickness. "The hammer came and drove them home," as the song about the magnetic qualities of the hero puts it.



The general, or collective, character of the animus transference in these cases is shown by the large number of women who are attracted to the same man. For the individual woman partakes of the ancestral experience through the animus who is racial rather than personal in his character, which accounts for the extraordinary similarity in the description given of him by different people.

Thus it happens that when one man fulfils the ideal of many women his appeal obviously rests not on his individual qualities but on those which are generally attractive to many women; that is to say, he carries those values of the animus which are not personal to any one of his admirers but are common to them all. This does not mean that his admirers do not feel themselves to be personally involved; they do. Jealousy and rivalry frequently arise between them, and the least hint of preference or of attention from the object of their admiration is treasured and used as a basis for quite unwarranted assumptions of his involvement. To the onlooker, the collective, non-individual character of the phenomenon is clear, even when the individuals concerned are completely or partially blind to it.

There is another aspect of transferences of this character where the collective nature of the involvement is not quite so easy to recognize. In the instances we have just discussed, one man carried the transference for many women, but we also find cases where a series of love-objects carry the self-same values for *one* lover. This, too, results from the transference of unconscious values to a human being, the anima in the case of a man, the animus in that of a woman. While the transference lasts, the loved one is all-perfect; there is a curious sense of fitness, even of predestination, in the choice. "I feel this woman to be my woman," a man once said of a woman whom he had met only two or three times, "I feel myself to be her man." There is a magic rightness

about it. But if for any reason the love-object should fail to satisfy the requirements of transference-carrier, the illusion is broken and the garment of love, torn from the first object, slips easily over the shoulders of the next, and the illusion of rightness and predestination begins over again.

It is just this kind of relationship, seemingly so unique, so personal, which is most subject to sudden disillusionment. For it is in fact no more than an illusion — an illusion produced by the projection of the anima or animus onto another being. There is a hint of this in an expression frequently used of relationships of this character, "She is my soul mate," which in psychological terms should not be interpreted "She is the mate of my soul," but, "She is my soul, my mate."

In legend and myth the factor of illusion or "magic" in love of this character is recognized. Love takes possession of the lovers as the result of drinking a magic potion. If both the man and the woman drink, a mutual animus-anima transference takes place, such as is depicted in *Tristan und Isolde*. Here the two love each other with the same kind of love, but, in spite of this fact, their love cannot be lived in the reality world, they must flee from reality, must forego their honour and ignore their obligations to King Mark. In cases where only one person drinks the draught, the philtre may be deliberately prepared for gaining power over the victim, as in *Götterdämmerung*, where Siegfried is lured to his dishonour and death, or, as in *A Midsummer Night's Dream*, when Titania falls in love with Bottom who is disguised as an ass.

Animus transference of this type is a very common occurrence. A woman falls in love; she is enthusiastic over the man; her emotions are strongly aroused; there is no doubt that mighty forces are brought into play. But the odd thing is that nothing happens; the situation always falls flat. The man may be intrigued for a little while; he is

certainly flattered, and he may even take advantage of the woman's involvement with him. But sooner or later disillusion creeps in; the spell is broken, the glamour gone; the beloved becomes only ordinary man. A few weeks, or perhaps only a few days, elapse, and the process begins all over again. Another man looms on the woman's horizon, and becomes the hero of the hour. Again the woman is aglow with the re-emergence of her animus values. It may be that this episode will be more satisfactory, that more of reality will be brought into it, and that the affair will last a little longer, but it is foredoomed to failure. Sooner or later it will be replaced by another similar projection.

Such a woman seems to be bound on the wheel which drags her through an endless series of projections, bound on it by one of the greatest laws of her being — the necessity to seek her own soul, her animus. But it is her fate to see him only as a projection upon one man after another. She loves him in one man, but she soon discovers she has been deceived, for the man and her animus are not the same thing. She loves him in another, lives through a brief period of illusion and awakens again. This time she metaphorically rubs her eyes and looks around, only to see her animus masquerading in the person of another man. Disillusion gives place to illusion and the whole experience is repeated. She realizes that this sort of thing leads nowhere, that she is following a chimera — the Ghostly Lover who lures his victim away from life and reality. And the question arises: How can this hopeless quest be checked? She may understand perfectly what is happening to her, yet be powerless to help herself. Her emotions are too deep and too powerful to be amenable to the commands of her conscious will.

A third way in which the Ghostly Lover may show himself is in the form of visions or values which are seen or

sensed deep in the unconscious, the inner world. Many people are lured by such phantasies. For instance, the would-be artist who sees marvellous pictures which she never paints, or the author whose poem or novel remains unwritten, or the theosophist who lives in a world which can never be realized in practical life — all are lured away from reality by the Ghostly Lover. If the artist tries to paint her picture, the meagreness of the reality-product discourages her. She feels it is better that one person, namely, herself, should keep the beauty of the vision unspoiled by an inadequate expression of it. She "catches Leviathan with an hook," it is true, but, instead of pulling out Leviathan, she herself is pulled in and lost to the reality-world. Surely it is better to catch a little fish and land it than to hook a great fish and be pulled under the water. At times the only wisdom may be for her to let go of these things and turn her attention to establishing a hold on reality. At others, by a supreme effort, the hidden value can be caught and brought to birth in the world, then the Ghostly Lover will change his character and become the Spiritual Animus. He is vanquished as Ghostly Lover; he no longer acts as Dybbuk, but becomes the woman's strength and guide; that is to say, he performs his right function of relating her to the unconscious.

The same mechanism which takes the would-be artist away from real life may function in other women who make no pretensions to artistic ability. Whenever it seems easier to enjoy an idea, or an interpretation alone, rather than to present it to the world, that it is the work of the Ghostly Lover should be suspected. Reality is the great test of value; if a thing works it is real and not a dream. This is the test that the world applies to one who claims to be an inventor. If he can make a model which will work, he is no idle dreamer. So, too, visions and thoughts can prove

themselves of value through their application in the world, even though they may relate to conduct and relationship, rather than to the material world. A vision which can bridge the gap between two human beings is no more an idle dream than was the vision through which the George Washington Bridge was conceived.

The constellation of the animus, whether as Prince Charming or through a projection to a living man or in the vision of inner values, is always important. For at such times potential values, which are ordinarily hidden away beyond reach in the depths of the unconscious, are stirred from their slumber and become available for consciousness. Our reach usually exceeds our grasp. Nevertheless, at the very moment when the animus values are glimpsed, energy is always released. This energy generally shows itself as emotion, but all too often the moving of the waters passes before one can stretch out a hand and make the value his own. Even when a woman is sufficiently aware to seize upon the treasure, it may be only to find it more firmly anchored in the primordial depths than she herself is in reality. In consequence, she will be in danger of being engulfed, if she does not take counsel of wisdom and relinquish for the moment her hold on the inaccessible treasure. But the power and attraction of the animus are such that she is compelled, even against her will, to return to it again and again, just as a woman who, having fallen in love with a man who has represented animus to her and having resolved never to repeat the experience, is none the less irresistibly drawn into another affair which is a duplication of the first. Her burnt fingers do not save her any more than singed wings save the moth from the flame.

Therefore the question of whether there is any way in which these values of the animus can be brought into reality and made to enhance the value of the conscious personality

becomes urgent. Is there any technique by which the Ghostly Lover can be made to change his form and become a psychological function creating for the woman a relation between the conscious and the unconscious worlds? In a chapter on the anima and the animus,\* Jung has outlined in general how this may be done and has discussed at length the advantages gained by the individual who succeeds in wresting the values from the anima and animus. The ways in which his method may be applied in the various situations already discussed must be more fully described.

When the animus appears only as a mood, based on the memory of a dead or lost lover or on a conscious or unconscious phantasy of "Prince Charming," obviously nothing external can be done directly in relation to the man concerned, for he lives only in the woman's inner world. But something *can* be done to counteract the effects in the outer world, which result from the woman's possession by the Ghostly Lover. For instance, she may set herself the task of becoming aware of the functioning of the critical attitude by which she depreciates all men whom she meets. She can attempt to undercut the animus by criticising her own critical attitude. When she makes a snap judgement about a man or a situation or is swayed by an unfounded opinion she must ask herself *why* she thinks this. To the onlooker this task appears easy. But if a woman who is possessed by the animus tries to reach consciousness in this way she will discover how difficult it is. For these opinions are in their nature perceived as *a priori* truths; they are not reached by a process of logic or argument. If they were, it would be relatively easy to detect the false step leading to the untenable position.

How then can such a woman become conscious of what

\* Jung, C. G., *Two Essays on Analytical Psychology*, p. 202. Dodd, Mead & Company, 1928.

she is doing ? To only a very small extent can she become aware by exercising a conscious critique; only in rare instances can be made aware by the protest of her friends. If she goes to an analyst she may become aware to a certain extent from a simple discussion of the incidents of her daily life. But for a real understanding of the situation, an analysis of the unconscious aspect of the incidents is necessary. There the work of the animus will be clearly shown, and he will be unmasked in his true aspect. Such evidence, coming as it does from the patient's own material, is convincing in a way that no exposition and no criticism from another can ever be, for the conviction of truth born of one's own unconscious material, to be appreciated, must be experienced.

When the source of her critical attitude is recognized in this way and the woman has released herself from the spell put upon her by the Ghostly Lover, she will be able to meet whatever human contacts life brings her in a more humble and accepting spirit than before. Such a change in attitude has an effect that is almost magical. Over and over again, women have told me that no sooner have they changed in their attitude than everyone changes towards them. People who formerly were resistant become receptive; those who were hostile or indifferent become sympathetic. It is as though some "magic" is working, and working, too, beyond the sphere of immediate contact. One woman, for instance, whose critical and possessive attitude had so alienated her best friend that he had come to avoid her, gradually perceived during the course of analysis where she had been at fault in expecting him to fulfil her ideal and realized that this was really an effect of her possession by the animus. Hardly had she come to this realization when her telephone rang; it was her friend calling up to ask her to go out with him — the first spontaneous move he had made in her direction for weeks.

Many instances could be cited showing that when a woman releases herself from the hold of the Ghostly Lover, she finds emotional value and new life in contacts which were previously sterile. This is one way by which the problem of the Ghostly Lover may be resolved.

Something of the same result may be achieved in cases where the animus is projected to a living man. Here again, the chief difficulty lies in unawareness of the real situation. When a woman makes a projection of her animus she does not know what she is doing, for, as Jung says, "the unconscious figures naturally do not appear as abstract and stripped of all accessories." On the contrary, to the woman the *fact* is that she meets a man who *is* this marvellous person. She *perceives* him to be such and only by a careful analysis of the situation in both its conscious and its unconscious aspects can the true nature of the case be recognized *while the projection lasts*. This is a very important point, for often the true nature of a situation can be readily recognized *after* it is past, for then the outcome gives evidence of its true nature — it is seen historically. Its hidden tendencies manifested through the life process are still nascent in the earlier stages; they are but germs hidden in the womb which shall bring forth the future, yet already inherent in the situation. This womb which holds the seed of the future is the unconscious. If the unconscious is analysed, the germs latent in any situation will be brought to light. Thus by analysing the unconscious content, we can view the present, as it were, historically; we can get a fourth dimensional point of view. It enables us to see things "as they are" and at the same time to see things "as they will be"; we outwit time, for we see the future in embryo.

This "foresight" surely is the significance of the third of the Three Fates, the Norn who spins the future from the past and the present. To see life in this way, not only "as it



is" but "as it will be," carries with it a new responsibility for our actions which to many may seem too costly to acquire and too heavy to bear. Wotan, we remember, paid for this privilege with the sight of one eye. We humans also pay heavily, for we can no longer be wafted along under the spell of an animus projection. It is ~~delight~~ delight and intoxication to be in love with a man who carries the animus values. He is our "Beau Ideal," our "soul mate" ! To analyse and, to understand this as a psychological illusion rather than as a piece of heaven on earth requires courage and the willingness to pay a great price. The price we must pay is to assume consciously the responsibility for our actions. No longer can we blame Fate or the man, nor can we consider ourselves injured innocents and sink back into illusion again, where

Each owns a paradise of glass . . .  
Like fauns embossed in our domain  
We look abroad and our calm eyes  
Mark how the goatish Gods of pain  
Revel; and if by grim surprise  
They break into our paradise  
Patient we build its beauty up again.\*

Nor can we ever again experience a sublimated state like that in which Emily Dickinson wrote of herself, after the break-up of her own love affair:

Title divine is mine  
The wife without  
The sign,  
Acute degree  
Conferred on me  
Empress of Calvary.

In this poem there is certainly no sign of any attempt to

\* *English Review*, June, 1923.

understand the psychological problem that her love had brought. We see here the very inception of the Ghostly Lover as memory of the lost man; and we see him in his true character, masquerading as Christ, while the poetess is his Queen. How could a woman look twice at an ordinary mortal man while that phantasy held her !

When a woman finds herself in love with a man to whom she has projected the Ghostly Lover, she can release herself from the dominance of her animus if she can work through the transference element in her love and make a real relationship with him. This outcome is naturally more feasible if the involvement is mutual. There is obviously no possibility of relationship where the hero is adored by thousands of women, as in the case of Rudolph Valentino, but in an ordinary social situation when a man and woman are attracted to each other, on account of a mutual anima-animus projection, it is possible to redeem the values which have been projected, by building up a relationship based on reality in place of the illusion of the transferred values. The problem of the Ghostly Lover is most frequently resolved in this way. When a man and woman marry there is almost invariably some element of an animus-anima projection in their love. After the first glamour has worn off, each begins to realize that his partner does not see him as he is, but that in some strange way he is distorted in the other's eyes, for in certain ways each is glorified and in others depreciated. But the whole mechanism is subtle and may not come clearly into conscious focus. There is, moreover, a great tendency to let things slide and not to make an issue of slight misunderstandings. After a few protests and a more or less prolonged conflict, the young couple generally settle down to the business of life and allow these misconceptions to go on practically unchallenged. In such a case the projection

of anima and animus persists and no real relatedness can develop.

One might think this an ideal solution of the situation, were it not that the garment of the projected animus or anima, so docilely accepted in the early days of marriage, becomes increasingly hard to throw off, and the man and woman find themselves progressively forced to wear the mask which was not repudiated at first. Such a situation formed the theme of Eugene O'Neill's play *The Great God Brown*. The mask so lightly assumed by Dion in order that he might fulfil his fiancée's ideal gradually hardens on him, crushing out his spontaneity and initiative. The second danger point now arises. The partner who has been submerged by the weight of the animus or the anima projection rebels and refuses to carry it any longer but forcibly reveals himself for what he is. If the whole situation does not disintegrate from the effects of the explosion, another opportunity is offered for building up something of reality-relatedness. But, once again, this outcome is, in the sense used above, historical, only the sequence of events brings the opportunity, and that generally not for many years. The obligation, in such a case, to work on the problem of relationship is the work of Fate; it is not the free choice of the individuals concerned. If, however, instead of merely living along, carried by the energy and desire created by the projected animus or anima values, this man and woman had sought out the intimations from the unconscious, it would have been possible to discover where the animus or anima projections obscured the situation. By this means they could have established at each point a small measure of relatedness to each other in their own true persons. As a result there would have been built up gradually through the years a reality in place of the illusion based on projection. To deal

with the problems of life in this way has a double value, for not only is reality substituted for illusion, but the anima or animus values, dissolved from their projection in the outer world, are also realized in the character and personality of the man or woman. The maturity which may sometimes be seen in a couple who have lived together for a life time, learning to know and accept each other, comes in no small measure from this assimilation of the anima and animus.

In other instances, the values of the Ghostly Lover may be realized through the creation of a work of art, although here I speak with more reservation. For the production of a work of art, even when it embodies the values made available through the anima or the animus, does not always mean that these values are really incorporated into the personality of the artist. If this were so, every great artist and every great poet would be a great individuality, a really developed human being. We should like to believe this, but unfortunately we cannot. For, lamentable as it is, a great poet or artist is frequently an all-too-human personality. It seems as though some poets paid, with their characters, the price of their genius. The work of art is often but another way in which the values of the animus are projected to the external world. Instead, however, of their being found in a loved object, they are projected in the form of an image of the inner drama. By this means something is gained; the world is richer in art; and the artist, through making actual the vision of his inner phantasy, has submitted himself to the discipline of hard work and to the appraisal of his fellow men. He is no idle dreamer; he has made good on the reality side. Nevertheless, if he does not assimilate the psychological significance of his own work, he cannot obtain for his own personal development the values of the soul image which have inspired his creation. He has seen his vision as a vision only. He does not realize that it is

the drama of his own inner life, and so he gains no development from his "artist's" insight.

And here we come to what is perhaps the most important part of the whole subject, namely, the assimilation of the values of the Ghostly Lover. At first when these values are unconscious they are completely unavailable for development. Then they are projected, and the individual becomes aware of them, but they are outside the personality. The problem is: How can they be brought back within the psyche in such a form that their energy may be available for conscious life-development ?

If a woman whose animus values are constellated in a projection to a man is analysed, a moment comes when the projection is broken. The psychological energy, or libido, formerly occupied with the projection, is released and sinks down into the unconscious where it begins to activate the primordial images that lie hidden there. At this moment it sometimes happens that she begins to produce spontaneous phantasies and visions, which represent the transformations which the libido is undergoing in the unconscious. If the woman takes these phantasies seriously as representing a certain kind of reality, she can begin to take a part in the phantasy, that is, she can "get into" the phantasy and participate in its development, instead of merely being obsessed by the mood of unhappiness into which such a disappointment is only too apt to throw her. Jung has described this method in his *Two Essays*. He says: "This method is the exact opposite of the old way, so characteristic of neurosis, of yielding completely to a mood. It is not weakness, not a spineless surrender, but a difficult achievement. For in spite of the temptation of the mood, one has to maintain objectivity and make the mood itself the object, instead of allowing it to become the domineering subject. He must try to get his mood to speak to him. His mood must tell him

what its nature is, and in whatever kind of fantastic analogy it chooses to employ. . . .” \* Through allowing the mood to unfold itself in this fashion a picture of the situation in the unconscious is revealed in which the subject can come to participate. If this participation can be achieved, a gradual development of the phantasy material takes place in such a way that the values, previously caught in the projection, are assimilated and serve to create a new centre for the personality which, as Jung says, “ensures the personality a new and more solid foundation.” In the *Two Essays* he gives a most striking instance of this use of the phantasy as a means of so getting in touch with the images of the unconscious as to wrest their energy from them for utilization in the building up of the personality. In the following piece of phantasy material, something of the same sort is taking place. A woman who had projected her animus to a man with whom she had fallen in love did not recognize that her involvement was due to an animus transference, but the man was apparently aware of danger. She met with a rebuff which threw her back upon herself. She was undergoing analysis at the time, hence instead of falling into a depression, she tried to get her mood to talk to her and to show her in phantasy the movement of the images of the unconscious, hoping by this to understand the significance of the frustration of her love. This was the phantasy or waking vision that came to her. I quote it in her own words:

Out of the woods into a sunny field I came. Fresh cool breezes from the surrounding mountains blew across the stretch of green sunlit meadow. I seemed to be in a shallow bowl held high to heaven. I was alone. There was only the sound of the long grass swaying in the breeze.

Suddenly from the woods behind me galloped four horses, two

\* Jung, C. G., *Two Essays on Analytical Psychology*, p. 238. Dodd, Mead & Company. See also pp. 219, 220.

black and two white. On them rode four knights in armour, each bearing a lance from which streamed a silken pennant. A knight in black armour with a dragon in rubies on his breast rode one white horse and carried a golden lance with a flaming red pennant that curled and twisted in the breeze like a tongue of flame. On the other white horse rode a knight in steel armour, with a blazing sun of sapphires on his breast, carrying a lance of steel, from which streamed a tongue of blue flame. A knight in gold armour with a topaz heart on his breast and a golden lance in his hand from which curled a tongue of yellow flame, rode one black horse. On the other rode a knight in silver armour with a crescent of emeralds on his breast and in his hand a silver lance with a long narrow pointed green flame streaming far behind.

The four horsemen galloped to the centre of the field. They dismounted and leaving their horses, paced off one hundred paces in opposite directions: the knight of the dragon one hundred paces to the North; the golden knight one hundred paces to the East; the knight of the emerald crescent one hundred paces to the South; and the knight of the sapphire sun one hundred paces to the West. They drove their lances into the earth, called their horses to them, mounted and drew their swords of flaming steel from their scabbards. At a shout, brandishing their swords in the sunlight, they spurred their horses and dashed headlong to meet their opponents. I fell to the earth and covered my eyes. I heard the heavy impact of the horses' bodies, heard the ring of steel on steel and got on my knees to pray. I must have fainted as I knelt. When I regained consciousness I opened my eyes and there before me in the centre of the field was an altar. On it was a shallow bowl of silver studded with rubies and emeralds and sapphires and topaz, in which burned a clear flame which shot to heaven. I staggered to my feet and drew near to the altar, and fell on my knees and bowed my head in prayer. Suddenly I heard a voice. I looked up and there in the flame, poised as if for flight was a magnificent eagle.

To give anything like a full interpretation of such a phantasy is far beyond the scope of this book; the psychological problems that are touched upon would lead too far afield, but a general interpretation will show something of

the course which the libido takes in its transformation.

The woman is in a bowl of the mountains, in a sort of earth-womb where she has drawn back in deep introversion. This drawing back into the womb of nature is a typical movement when the libido which was streaming out forcefully towards an outer object is suddenly checked. Here in the inner world she sees the heroes, the glorious personifications of the animus, come galloping. They are four in number and are related to the four fundamental colours and to the four points of the horizon. They represent the four divisions of the microcosm no less than of the macrocosm. We might speak of them as the four functions\* of the psyche. They appear here as figures of chivalry. Their jewels and regal appearance indicate how important are the values that have been stirred to activity by a situation which, judged from external standards, is relatively trivial. This woman has made many animus transferences before, but this is the first time that she has realized what she was doing *while she was doing it*. The annihilation of the unconscious figures in the conflict is the result of that realization.

Within the circle of the hills the knights trace out a square, one hundred paces each way. This is related to the age-old problem of the attempt to square the circle, to measure the incommensurable. The knights delimit a portion of the field which is measurable and, therefore, knowable. Psychologically this means that the animus projections measure off a segment of the illimitable cosmos which should rightly belong to the human psyche of the woman. When the animus is not dealt with and is not brought to consciousness he functions as the Ghostly Lover who lures the woman away from known and knowable reality to limitless regions. Therefore this delimiting activity of the four knights is very important. It means that while the human psyche is still

\* Jung, C. G., *Psychological Types*. Harcourt, Brace & Company, 1923.



incommensurable by virtue of its contact with the unconscious, yet, in this instance, the animus figures delimit it and make it, as it were, available for experience through the function of relating the human being to the world of the collective unconscious.

Thus the patterns of this phantasy form a kind of diagram of the psyche. The similarity of such diagrams to the mandalas, or magic circles, of China, Thibet and India has recently been discussed by Jung in *The Secret of the Golden Flower*. The pattern drawn here is a mandala. In the Orient such mandalas are used in meditation and other religious practices, in order to find the central point of the personality, which is not the ego, but is non-personal. And here through a psychological process the woman is doing a similar thing.

After the knights clash the woman finds that they have disappeared. What remains is a central altar with a bowl upon it, ornamented with the jewels previously worn by the knights; that is to say, the animus values are transferred to the bowl on the altar. Within the bowl is a flame (energy) the energy which was manifested before in the conflict of the knights, and, on the objective plane, in the intensity of the woman's involvement with the man to whom she had made the animus projection. From the bowl arises, phoenix-like, an eagle, the bird of long flight, who soars up to the sun.

During the transformation the woman loses consciousness, an evidence that such a change cannot be understood or grasped by the conscious intellect. It is and will always remain a mystery — one of the miracles of life. This unconsciousness is also a kind of death. It signifies that the conscious ego is being displaced as the centre of the personality. It is a kind of death of the ego.

The bowl on the altar is like the bowl of the hills. Here,

within the four-square area, which the knights measured off and delimited from the unknown circle in the hills, another circle appears, suggesting that this new centre of the microcosm has a certain similarity to the macrocosm. It, too, is a bowl or circle, not to be measured by our rule of measure. (Note that the area of a circle  $\pi r^2$  is unknowable, except as an imaginary figure owing to the nature of  $\pi$ , which cannot be worked out exactly.) This means that this new centre of the psyche is beyond complete comprehension by the conscious. It partakes of the nature of the cosmos. It is as though a fragment of the cosmos became crystallized in the very centre of the human psyche. And just as a drop of water is the ocean in miniature, so this central crystallization is the cosmos in miniature. In terms of religion it is God within the human being. Such a concept has been the central mystery of many great religions, and we meet the same idea coming directly from the unconscious in the phantasy of a modern American woman. The form of the phantasy shows plainly that the bowl and its contents carry for this woman the values of a religious object, for at sight of them she falls on her knees to pray.

The eagle, which rises from the flame is, like the phoenix, the promise of the renewal of life. It is analogous to the dove, the Holy Spirit, which descended upon the disciples in tongues of flame. In the Christian story the Holy Spirit, which was to bring God to dwell within the hearts of the believers, descended only after Christ, the incarnation of God as Hero, had departed from the world. Psychologically it is also true that the Spiritual Animus comes to dwell within the psyche only after the projection of the animus, the incarnation of the Ghostly Lover, has been overcome. Thus it is that the Ghostly Lover disappears and in his stead is born a new spiritual power transforming the life of the individual. Through this redeemed animus the woman gains

a relation to the masculine principle within herself. This masculine principle is the Logos, or Wisdom. When she is identified to the animus she is possessed by opinions and rationalizations and so-called principles which do not represent true wisdom at all. These are the work of the Ghostly Lover. True wisdom can be known only through the Spiritual, or Redeemed, Animus who is a Mediator between the conscious and unconscious. He brings the values of the creative sources of the unconscious within reach of that human being who has had the courage and the strength to overcome the Ghostly Lover.

---

## CHAPTER III

### WORK

IN THE first chapter we spoke of woman as she finds her life and satisfaction in relation to man. She follows the pattern laid down by Eve. She is Maid, Wife, Mother, or Widow, which are aspects of life that suffice for her. She hardly knows of any other possibilities. Life in relation to her man and to society is fulfilled for her in the living of her feminine functions. She lives as *woman*. But, if she is to become an independent personality, instead of being only the feminine counterpart of a man, she must bring up to consciousness her own masculine qualities. Practically, this means, as a rule, that she must go out into the world and submit to the discipline such a step implies. She is able to take a place in the world of affairs only through the exercise of these masculine qualities which are ordinarily latent or unconscious, consequently many a woman who enters business or a profession is characterized by more or less masculine appearance and habits which bear witness to the change which has taken place in her psychological attitude.

In the beginning of their struggle for independence women were obliged to identify themselves without reservation to their masculine adaptation, and, for the most part, they sacrificed their love life to it completely. They were obsessed by the desire to prove the equality of the sexes. They could see no reason why men should not accept them on the basis of their real accomplishment in life; they did not realize

that a man cannot accept a woman who rejects her own feminine nature. Professionally trained women tend to judge each other by their achievements, in the same way that men judge men. But men cannot so judge a woman. It is really impossible for them to estimate a woman's value except on the basis of her feeling quality. An example of this occurred during the early days of the struggle for suffrage, when the privilege of pleading its cause before the United States Senate was granted to Victoria Woodhull, a flagrant adventuress whose one recommendation was that she was a "man's woman," after it had been refused to Susan B. Anthony who had spent her life working for the improvement of professional standards among women. Women, most of them, cannot understand why feminine values should be brought into a professional question at all. But, if women are to progress further in the man's world of work, they must recognize it is a case of: "This ought ye to have done and not to have left the other undone."

The need to fight for the right to independence had passed its initial stages before 1914. With the coming of the World War woman's "right" to work was established and consequently her attitude largely changed. The bitterness and belligerence which were characteristic of the early feminist women disappeared and instead the professional woman of the nineteen twenties emerged. This woman, freed from the conflict, assured in her right to a place in the business world, could put all her energy into her professional achievement. She had the poise and emotional calm which the earlier women so often lost in the heat of the struggle for independence. But in devoting themselves heart and soul to their work these women rarely had time or energy for the emotional side of life. For them it was necessarily a choice between marriage and a career. But today this antithesis has become much less marked and the third stage of the

woman movement has been entered upon. For today many young women achieve marriage *and* a career. The voluntary control of her family which modern science has made possible is one very important factor in this change, but a modification in the woman's own attitude which has taken place during the last decade must not be overlooked.

The woman's problem is not yet solved, however. She has won the right to live her life in the man's world, but the necessity to devote time and energy to her education and later to her profession still force her to pull away from the life of wife and mother which would fulfil her feminine and biological needs. For the woman these two ways of life stand, even today, in stark opposition. No satisfactory adjustment has been reached which might give to women, in general, a pattern for reconciling them. Hence, if any individual woman is to live fully in both realms of life, she must struggle with this problem for herself. In their endeavour to find a solution for the conflicting claims of work and love many have stepped beyond the conventional code which bound our immediate forebears. Probably such experiments are a necessary preliminary to a change in our social organization which may give opportunities both to men and women to develop a greater degree of maturity.

If any human being is to reach full maturity, both the masculine and the feminine sides of his personality must be brought up to consciousness. Each part must then undergo a discipline which shall produce a gradual development on that particular side. The stages through which the individual passes in the progress towards psychological maturity, as they affect the development of woman in her feminine rôle, have already been spoken of in the first chapter. The same stages, namely, the naïve, the sophisticated, and the conscious, must be experienced also in the evolution of the masculine values of a professional woman.

When a woman first brings her masculine qualities up into consciousness, she lives through a stage of identification with this side of her personality. The personal ego becomes a determining factor in her life, for education has as its aim the increasing of power through knowledge. Instead of being gentle and pliant and led by her feelings, instead of acting, in other words, as a feminine being, she begins to recognize a goal, as a man does, and in many instances becomes aggressive, dominating, and opinionated. The undeveloped and undisciplined masculine qualities in the background of her psyche take control of her personality. She is no longer guided by her feminine impulse and feelings without a conscious knowledge of where they are leading her, but is guided instead by a masculine authority which directs her from the unconscious. She has views and opinions about everything. These opinions are not logically thought-out judgements, but seem to her obvious truths, as though "everyone must think so." Often they will be based on an assumption of what some authoritative person such as the father, or a teacher, or even a columnist, would think. In other cases, they may be quite indefinite in their origin. For instance, more than once when I have questioned the accuracy of a statement of fact from such a woman she has replied, "But I have seen it in print." — Much of the success of modern advertising is based on this psychological prejudice. — To those who come in contact with a woman in this phase of development, she seems extremely dogmatic. It is useless to argue with her, although she often delights in argument, for always with her the conclusion is already reached before the argument begins. As a matter of fact, she never argues in order to reach the truth, but only in order to convince her opponent of her view of the matter. For her the ego, the sense of a personal I, has become identified with the promptings which come from the animus.

The woman is not able to hold in consciousness at the same time the feminine and the masculine voices within her psyche; she allows the masculine to over-ride the feminine and exclude it. Such a woman is said to be identified to the animus. Animus identification is not limited to the professional groups of women. On the contrary, many examples of this condition may be found in the ranks of the married.

Jung speaks of the quality of masculinity as meaning to know one's goal and to do what is necessary to achieve it.\* So the animus-identified woman, living as she does on the masculine side of her nature, aims directly at what she wants. If she wants marriage, she goes after it and may succeed in "catching a man." Her direct approach, however, as a rule, only attracts the rather vague, inefficient and somewhat feminine man, or, indeed, apart from attraction, she may succeed with such a man simply because he is too vacillating and indeterminate to escape, while a more masculine man would be repelled. When she is married, the era of petticoat rule begins and the man finds himself more and more dominated, his masculine sphere being progressively usurped by his aggressive and efficient wife. [Some men under this régime have been known to take to drink, others have become domestic pets, while yet others have found refuge in invalidism.] The trouble with this masculinity of the woman is that it is quite undisciplined. In the old days if a man found himself married to an animus-identified woman, he resorted to physical violence, and it was doubtless on account of this problem that wife-beating was allowed by law ! If an animus-woman today should marry a really stalwart husband, it might be that her animus could be disciplined by his masculine strength even apart from physi-

\* Jung, C. G., *Contributions to Analytical Psychology*, p. 179. Harcourt, Brace & Company, 1928.



cal violence, but, as was said above, generally speaking, the animus type of woman marries a rather diffident, weak man, who is quite unable to attempt single-handed the discipline of a woman's animus. The result is that if such a woman marries, her "devil" usually rules the household. She is upheld in her tyranny by her husband's submissive attitude while in any conflict with the outside world she does not hesitate to use him as a shield. In external situations, where the impact of the world might bring some discipline, and, indeed, would do so if she were single, she resorts to the married woman's defence and compels her husband to protect her.

Naturally all animus-identified women are not so obviously outrageous as this picture would suggest. Many women may conceal their dominance under an exterior of kindness and good nature. But you have only to cross them, or even to go your own way, and you will find out that, in spite of its appearance of softness and conciliation, their rule is a very real one.

Women whose masculine qualities come to the fore and who find for themselves a career in the world where they can exercise their individual aptitudes have a far greater chance of redeeming this side of their characters from the hold of the unconscious than the woman who marries. For, in order to learn a profession or trade and to practice it successfully, a woman has to meet certain reality demands. If she is too aggressive or opinionated she will lose her position. If her opinions do not tally with the facts she must either change her opinions or find herself disregarded. The world, with its inexorability becomes her schoolmaster. Instead of being, like her married sister, face to face only with a husband who is presumably in love with her and who can be coerced by many wiles, the unmarried woman must adapt herself to a reality which is not at all under the necessity of

obliging or humouring her. For she has undertaken to make herself economically independent in a world previously occupied only by men, where the conditions of life and activity have been created by men for men, with no attention given to the women's attitude or point of view. Under this discipline she may really develop many of the virtues which were considered formerly as the exclusive acquirements of men — courage, honesty, dependability, the power to co-operate, to be impersonal in her attitude, and to make decisions with impartiality and fairness. But, as these things are acquired through a discipline of her animus and not through a spontaneous functioning of her feminine characteristics, they always tend to be a little excessive, a little inflexible; her justice tends to scrupulosity; her courage will not stop short of martyrizing herself.

Of the general run of women whom one meets in business and the professions, all the more efficient and successful have won for themselves something of this development of the animus which makes it possible for them to function adequately in life on their masculine qualities. Such women acquire a new self-respect from doing a piece of work, worth while in itself. To do a good "job," even if it is mechanical, and far more if it takes a larger share of her creative energy, brings to a woman, as to a man, the consciousness of being an independent member of society. She gains a real release of energy by learning to do her work whether she feels like it or not. The voluntary submission to discipline, the ability to hold herself to her daily task, even though she may be in trouble, bring very real rewards, and indeed the necessity to apply herself has proved a stabilizing point to many a woman when her world was in flux. Through these things a woman's character develops and her will power, which Jung has defined as the "ability to do gladly that which I must do," grows. This phase of the woman corresponds to the

second stage of development, that of ego-consciousness, or sophistication.

The world of work, however, is essentially a world of competition which forces the ego into consciousness. In the case of the anima-woman the ego often hides almost entirely in the unconscious. She gets what she wants indirectly through the man. The professional woman, however, is compelled to work directly for what she wants; consequently her ego develops and is forced too much to the fore. Sometimes this unfortunate over-emphasis is quite apparent and blatant, but often the ego-trend is not so obvious and she herself may be quite unaware of her true motive, not realizing that the desire for personal power and prestige runs through everything she does. She may, for instance, be devoted to a cause; she may give her time and her energy for an ideal, most unselfishly as it seems, but the apparent devotion to an impersonal cause or ideal may be but a trick of the animus. It is of the very nature of the animus to present what appears to be truth under the guise of generalized principles, high sounding words, or great ideals, which have a peculiar attraction for women functioning on animus. For instance, I once met a woman who told me in all seriousness that she was going to devote her life to "the progress of the universe!" It had never occurred to her to ask herself in what direction progress for the universe lay, nor yet what effect her efforts were likely to have on the universe at large! When a woman becomes identified with a cause, she can devote all her energies to its furtherance without realizing the part her ego plays in the matter.

A woman who is related to a cause in this unconscious way is, however, very vulnerable. Any criticism of the cause seems to be directed against her personally, and it is naturally impossible for her to take an impersonal attitude. If her official connection with it is broken, her interest, which

previously appeared to be with the principle involved, may suddenly cease. Her real motive — a natural interest in her own power and prestige — is then exposed unmistakably. A woman who passes her whole life on this level of development may be successful while she is still young and the power and influence which she attains may satisfy her during middle life, but when she is faced with the problem of old age she will inevitably find herself at a loss.

If a further stage of development is reached, however, the animus-woman may find, just as men do, her redemption from personal aims in seeking for a general ideal to which she is willing to sacrifice herself. "The courage and capacity for self-sacrifice of such women," writes Jung, "is certainly to be marvelled at, and only the blind could fail to see the good that has come out of these efforts. But no one can evade the fact, that in taking up a masculine calling, studying, and working in a man's way, woman is doing something not wholly in agreement with, if not directly injurious to, her feminine nature." \* For always her psychological centre of gravity is too high. Nothing really strikes to the depths of her being. Her emotional nature remains untouched.

At first her work and her interests satisfy her, but later she is likely to become aware of her loneliness. Her sexuality awakens. She is stirred by a passing man and reaches out after the proffered companionship and satisfaction. To her amazement the man withdraws. She does not know why for she is prepared to love him, to give him everything in her power. She does not realize that he is repelled by her very intensity. He might enjoy a flirtation with her, provided it is clearly understood that there are to be no obligations and no broken hearts, but he is afraid he will have her round his neck for the rest of his life. This difference be-

\* Jung, C. G., *Contributions to Analytical Psychology*, p. 169. Harcourt, Brace & Company, 1928.

tween the man's expectation and the woman's as to the implications of a love affair constitutes a very real problem. For he usually takes it as a passing incident to be enjoyed while it lasts, but always kept as a light affair which he intends to break off just as soon as it shows signs of becoming inconvenient. While she, consciously or unconsciously, takes it as a relation which potentially, at least, may become permanent, and, indeed, she often disconcerts him by falling in love and taking it *au grand sérieux*. Even when the woman has lain in wait for him, not at all because she loves this particular man, but simply because she wants an affair, this result may still overtake them. Her initial attitude to the affair seems like his, impersonal, but a difficulty arises because they each attempt to make the situation fulfil an *a priori* conception of *what it should be*, instead of allowing the relationship to evolve according to its inherent character. The man is afraid to leave things to run their own course for fear of getting involved in a relationship which may demand too much of him. He finds it awkward to become really involved; he hates to be obliged to take seriously what might be just a pleasant pastime, for nothing curtails freedom so badly. The woman, on the other hand, also fears to get her feelings involved. It seems to her that if she should do so almost anything might happen to her. Her professional adaptation, for instance, might go to pieces, leaving her stranded without the ability to continue to earn her living. Only with great difficulty have women extricated themselves from the feminine rôle which history has prescribed for them and learned a new self-respect and independence. But this lesson could only be acquired by keeping their feelings strictly under control. All their energies have been engaged in developing the masculine side of their natures, and nothing meantime has been done towards disciplining and developing the feminine instinct which yet remains a most

powerful force within them. The professional woman who embarks upon an *affair* fears that if she should concede anything to the instinctual side, she might fall straightway into a pit of the instincts. And so she holds fast to her superiority won through her intellectual achievements.

Before going further it is worth while to ask: What is the position that women have won for themselves in the world of work? It is now generally recognized that women, certainly some women, do as well as men in school and college work. A very fair proportion of women can be found at the upper end of examination lists whether in the purely academic or in the more technical fields such as medicine, law, economics, and so forth. These women go out into the world to compete on equal terms with men. We should, therefore, expect to find women scattered in similar proportion throughout the upper ranks of workers. But this is not the case. For the most part, women are not found filling the biggest and most responsible positions, either in industry or in the professions. Over and over again, one hears the complaint that an efficient and well-trained woman has been passed over in favour of a younger and less well-trained man; that women must content themselves with routine and less remunerative positions. This state of affairs has been accounted for along two lines of reasoning. Women say that they are deliberately passed over because of men's jealousy and prejudice. On the other hand, it is argued that the higher paid posts ought to be held by men because they have a family to support. But are these the only explanations? If men are asked why women are compelled to occupy the inferior positions in industry, they often allege inefficiency and an inability in general to take the initiative. They admit exceptions but on the whole they consider it unwise to give positions of great responsibility to women, not only for this reason but also because they harbour a fear that a woman

may marry at any moment and throw over her obligations.

The amount of really creative and original work women have produced is indeed, relatively slight. The number of outstanding women writers, artists, musicians, scientists, or financiers is amazingly small. Why is this? Are women really not so creative as men? This is a question that only the future can answer. But certain factors in the psychology of women have a bearing on the problem.

In the first place, from the very beginning of our civilization there has been a widespread conviction that women cannot create, a conviction that it is in some obscure way almost indecent for them to do so. The conventional attitude suggests that creativeness is the prerogative of the man while for a woman to put forth something she herself has conceived and created is to disregard her instinctive reticence and modesty. In the last century writers such as George Eliot and George Sand felt themselves obliged to assume masculine names to conceal their identity. In these days of free education no woman consciously *thinks* that she must not create. But still the sense that women *shall* not create remains; it is almost like a taboo, which always works from a much deeper level than does a conscious prejudice. A woman *thinks* that women can create, that she herself has something to say well worth the saying, yet she may be quite unable to say it. Her state is like that of the woman who thinks she has freed herself from the sexual taboos of the last generation. She may consciously believe in free love and yet find herself in terrible conflict if she becomes involved in a situation in actual life where her theories are put to the test. It almost looks as though women believed the world of work and achievement to belong to men only; that these things represent the man's world. Intellectually and consciously women strive against this prejudice, sometimes with rancour and bitterness. But the prejudice per-

sists and deep down in the unconscious many women have given it credence.

I am speaking here of a woman's creative abilities only in relation to the external world of objective reality, which has been considered the man's world. In the woman's world naturally woman is the chief creator, and no Victorian prejudice hampers her in the exercise of her creative abilities, whether in the biological realm — the creation of new life — or in the realm of Eros, where she creates relationship and that feeling atmosphere best illustrated by the word home. In these places a woman creates from the feminine side of her nature and her creation and its method of presentation need only to accord with the laws and customs which women make to guide their own feminine activity.

When a woman tries to make a creative contribution in the world outside the home, she is tempted to make it in the man's way, the only way she has been taught. But the woman's way is different. Before she can tap the source of her own creativity and be able to contribute something really original to the world, she must have experienced deeply her own feminine nature; otherwise, she is bound to speak from the animus. It is in the head only! We have an exceedingly clear example of this in the life of Elizabeth Barrett Browning. She had written many beautiful and charming poems before she met Robert Browning, but these early poems were all intellectual in type. During her engagement to Browning she wrote the sonnets which were afterwards published under the title of *Sonnets from the Portuguese*. In these she expressed her own love experience and for the first time showed herself as really creative, a really great poet. "They [the sonnets] were intimate outpourings of a full heart meant for his eye alone," writes one of her biographers. "Elizabeth had never been one to share her emotions with the world; she was an



intellectual, not a lyric poet. As her husband read . . . he was the more impressed with the universality of these poems in which she had, without restraint, expressed her innermost self. . . At first when he suggested publication Elizabeth was adamant. . . She could and did share with the world her intellectual ideas; she could write for the world a fictitious love story; her emotions and her own love story were not public property. . . Had they been written originally for publication, she could not thus have shown her heart. . . Her emotions were personal, not of the stuff of which public poems are made. To publish his heart's deepest outpourings the poet must, unless he be insincere, divorce the idea of himself from the emotion; he must universalize his emotional experience. Elizabeth wrote these sonnets as the outcome of her emotional crises. It is because the experience, though rare in such perfect form, is the universal ideal that her poems remain the perpetual voice of true lovers." \*

A woman's creation is not an abstraction; it is a very personal thing, based primarily on her own subjective experience and not on objective experiences of the external world. If a woman is to create in the man's world, she needs not only to bring up into consciousness her masculine qualities, but also to experience deeply her feminine nature. If the man is not to live exclusively in the world of affairs, he too needs to develop both sides of his personality so that he may take his share in creating in the woman's realm. In much of woman's creative activity he cannot participate — she alone can be Mother. But, in the making of a conscious, that is, a psychological, relationship between them he must take part. To do this he must domesticate and discipline his own feminine qualities which are personified in his anima.

\* Boas, Louise Schutz, *Elizabeth Barrett Browning*, p. 131. Longmans, Green & Company, 1930.

At the same time the demand upon him to develop his masculine powers to their greatest capacity will not be abated. Concerning this, Jung says: "man will find himself forced to develop within himself some feminine characters, namely, to become observant both psychologically and erotically. It is a task he cannot avoid, unless he prefers to go trailing after woman, in a hopeless boyish fashion, always in danger of finding himself stowed away in her pocket." \* But the man who tries to become a "Great Lover" or to establish himself in the world of men through his feelings will be hopelessly lost. He becomes just a phenomenon, not a man at all. In D. H. Lawrence's *Lady Chatterley's Lover* is drawn a hero of this type, who, because of the hurt life has given him, has withdrawn from the world and hidden himself in a lowly position. He tries to make a new life based entirely on feeling values, but he is quite unable to establish any relation to the woman other than a sexual one, for he cannot uphold the masculine end of the relationship. One does not wonder that Lawrence has to end the book without describing the marriage which he yet suggests is to be so perfect.

For the woman to achieve anything of value and permanence in the masculine world, she must be developed on both sides of her nature, but even when this has been done and she feels herself ready to put forth in a creative work the wisdom she has gained she will probably meet another barrier within herself. For, in order to speak openly about woman's secret knowledge, she must overcome her fundamental instincts of modesty, passivity, and reserve. To most women this seems well-nigh impossible. For it is the woman's nature to hold herself in the background, to maintain a passive attitude, and, psychologically speaking, to veil

\* Jung, C. G., *Contributions to Analytical Psychology*, pp. 178-79. Harcourt, Brace & Company, 1928.

herself and her reactions, and to seek her goal only by a devious and largely unconscious route. For a woman to show herself clearly as an individual, to come into the open and say what she has to say demands that she go contrary to this natural tendency. To do such a thing with real integrity involves a complete sacrifice of her ego and she can bring herself to make this sacrifice only for some very potent reason. We respect the Lady Godiva who, to save the lives of her people, could disregard her inherent modesty and ride naked through the streets, but we have a different attitude towards women who take part in the popular *Revue nue*s and display their charms for a livelihood, for the motives are different. Lady Godivas are, however, relatively rare; few women sacrifice their innate sense of reserve for reasons comparable to hers. Ordinarily, the woman releases herself from the restraints of her modesty through an animus opinion, telling herself: "It is absurd to feel this way. Men do not feel so. Why then should I be hampered by so silly a prejudice?" Through this argument she divides herself into two distinct parts. She becomes over-frank and outspoken, acting on her rationalized opinion, but this apparent frankness is achieved by repressing her real feeling, which means that she reserves the real essence of the matter. As a consequence, what she does or says often fails to convince. Realizing this, she tries to supply the lack in her presentation with a certain urgency; having taken out feeling, she puts in passion, which naturally raises resistances in her audience.

This is the mechanism which lies behind the modern cult of frankness and simplicity in sexual and other matters. The woman says, "The prudery of the Victorian age is stuffy and ridiculous. Let us be frank and get rid of all this hyper-modesty." But her very instinct is to be modest. The feminine essence must be concealed; it may show itself

only when the situation is exactly right on the feeling side. Hence, over-frankness is just as hampering as over-modesty. The important point is this, a woman's revealing of herself is a matter of feeling rapport, it is not at all a matter of reason or logic. So when, through her animus, a woman assumes a pose of frankness in these matters, it necessarily follows that she must repress her deeper feeling, as well as her sexuality and act as though sexuality did not exist. Hence we see naked or nearly naked, sun-bathing and groups of men and women dancing nude in the woods. The sexuality is all in the unconscious. For in a promiscuous situation of this kind, naturally, sexuality must be repressed if one is not to be caught in an animal-like orgy. But the repression may well extend to other situations, with the result that even in a friendship with one man where feeling might well ripen into love a woman who has practiced the modern over-frankness may find herself quite unable to respond normally. Or the repressed sexuality may show itself in various disturbances of the unconscious, as, for instance, in nightmares, fears, or other neurotic symptoms.

Consequently, when a woman's manner towards men is characterized by great frankness, it is to be expected that she will make comradesly relations to men, but without any really deep contacts on the feeling side, for her own feeling has been of necessity repressed and, therefore, cannot touch the man's feeling. For such a woman it is a significant turning-point in her relation to a man, when she finds that she can no longer look him frankly in the eyes, for it means that her real feeling which may not be shown openly has begun to stir.

And so the circle is complete and once more the woman finds herself confronting a man in the earlier primitive situation — woman to man. Has nothing, then, been accomplished by this half century and more of search for

freedom and independence, of rebellion from the old ways ? Is woman to fall back once again into her old rôle of man's counterpart ? Or is it a different woman who comes back to the primal relationship ? She turns back to her problem more profoundly herself. In seeking for a solution of her personal problem she has accomplished more than she set out to do. For Society today begins to sense possibilities inherent in the relation between men and women which would hardly have happened without this new consciousness on the part of women. Indeed, the change in woman herself is perhaps the key to the significance of the woman movement.

In looking for the significance of a cultural movement, it is necessary to free oneself from the prejudice that the aims consciously held by the participants are identical with the aims or goal of the movement itself. It will be readily granted, for instance, that Henry VIII's reasons for favouring the separation of the Anglican from the Roman Church had little to do with Protestantism *per se*. His desire for a divorce and a new wife was entirely personal and its satisfaction was personal. Historically speaking, however, it matters not at all that his connubial wishes were gratified; what matters is that the separation between the two branches of the Church occurred. So in the movement which we are considering, it is a small point that the individual lives of certain women have been enlarged and fulfilled. The great point is that as a result of their efforts the Western nations as a whole have gained a new insight regarding the very nature of the relationship which men and women can establish between them.

Jung, speaking of the relations between men and women, has this significant thing to say: "The discussion of the sexual problem is, of course, only the somewhat crude beginning of a far deeper question, namely, that of the psychic

or human relationship between the sexes. Before this latter question the sexual problem pales in significance, and with it we enter the real domain of woman. Her psychology is founded on the principle of Eros, the great binder and deliverer; while age-old wisdom has ascribed Logos to man as his ruling principle. In modern speech we could express the concept of Eros as psychic relationship and that of Logos as objective or factual interest." \*

If we look back over the last hundred years, we can clearly discern that the aim of womanhood, as shown in the woman's movement, has been to reach the goal of a more conscious relationship between the sexes. The individual women concerned may not have realized this, but the historic sequence betrays the unrecognized aim. The way of woman is always to go by devious routes to her goal. You will rarely discover what a woman's objective is by asking her a direct question, nor yet by observing what she attempts first and deducing her intentions from that, for she is herself often unconscious of her real aim. She will begin to look for a reel of thread and end by cleaning the whole house. She may have been quite unaware that it was her intention to house-clean. But on further investigation it is obvious that preparations have been quietly going forward for some time for a spring-cleaning, although she was unaware of it herself.

Because of her relative weakness, woman has learnt to bring things to pass by strategy rather than by direct attack. This use of strategy is not a consciously thought out diplomacy as it is with a man, but is an instinctive reaction to a situation which calls for greater strength than she possesses. One can see the same thing in animals. The door of my room is open. The dog wants to run out and bark at a

\* Jung, C. G., "Woman in Europe," *Contributions to Analytical Psychology*, pp. 175, 176, 177. Harcourt, Brace & Company, 1928.

stranger in the hall. I tell her not to do so. She knows that if she goes directly to the door I shall use my superior strength and prevent her from going. So she waits till I am occupied with my book. Then she gets up and saunters behind a chair, which is in the opposite direction to the door. Then very quietly, keeping a piece of furniture always between herself and me, she goes completely round the room and so reaches the open door. In the same way women, when faced by a situation which they are unable to overcome by strength, resort to subterfuge and strategy. And lastly, the indefiniteness and unconsciousness of woman, which Jung has spoken of as being the complement of the man's more conscious purpose, play their part in the tendency to seek her goal by devious ways.

The blue-stockings attitude and the feminist movement generally were parts of this deviousness. Women do not really want complete independence of men in any sense which implies isolation. What woman really wants is relationship, and for that a certain separateness is necessary. There cannot be any real relationship between a dominant and a dependent member of a group, any more than there can be real relationship between masters and their slaves. Further, the independent or individual side of woman's psyche was so completely neglected that it was incredibly undeveloped and childish. The most complete concentration and devotion were required for a period in order to compensate for the former neglect. In the early days of the woman's movement no woman who was not devoted heart and soul to the achievement of independence and education could possibly have made any headway against the enormous weight of public opinion from without, and the inertia of custom from within, which combined to hold her down in the accustomed grooves of what was *right and proper* for a woman. When such a view is universally held

in a community it comes to have the significance of a divinely instituted order. Women in breaking with custom had also to break with what they had been taught was God's will for them. Only those who are single-hearted in their devotion can free themselves from such bonds. We get the sense of this complete concentration of purpose in Strachey's *Life of Florence Nightingale*. Instead of living only for herself and her personal satisfactions, she surrendered family, ease, social position, wealth, even love and marriage, to her urgent need to work in the world, and make herself a useful and valuable member of society.

But woman, as always, was then, and still is, unconscious of her true aim. She thought she wanted independence and a career. This was a subsidiary, though a very necessary phase in the movement towards her real goal, namely, the creation of the possibility of psychic, or psychological, relation to man.

If woman herself, however, has not understood her own goal, is it any wonder that her aim has been misunderstood? A few discriminating men have encouraged her, because they have understood, perhaps better than she did herself, what her goal really was. Outstanding among such far-sighted men is Jung. He has repeatedly reminded us that man and woman together make up humanity; that if woman remains in a state of primitive unconsciousness suitable to the days of Mediæval Europe, man alone cannot progress very far in the quest for greater consciousness. The woman's problem is her problem, yes! but it is also a problem which concerns humanity. If she does not solve *her* problem, mankind is held back to her level of unconsciousness.

It is imperative then that woman bring up the masculine side of her nature, that she learn to love a "thing," or an idea, even, though this is primarily a man's prerogative, and even though her attitude towards the *thing* or *idea* will



never be his. For, however completely she has succeeded in this task, she will care more about the *application* of the idea than for the idea itself, though she will still call it the *idea*. So it is, her love finds its way through the *thing* to the human being back of the thing.

There is a certain kind of impersonality which kills a woman's interest. If her work is purely mechanical, such as filing index cards, or moving a lever to and fro on a machine, her interest is, as a rule, not satisfied, as a man's perhaps might be, in working out a new system, or in discovering *how* it is done, or even in coming to love the machine. She will either become a sort of "robot" or she will turn away from the task and occupy herself with the person for whom she is doing it.

But a personal motive will carry a woman through an almost unlimited amount of monotonous work, without risk of her losing her soul. For instance, she can make an infinite number of stitches if the embroidery is for a special place in her house; or she can knit sweaters and socks indefinitely for her husband and boys. But if she is to find a satisfactory adaptation in the world where the personal motive is no longer operative, she needs a new kind of impersonality, one characteristic of the best masculine work. For the woman, however, there is always the danger that she may become identified to her attitude of impersonality and, as a result, push her feminine values into the unconscious. She can avoid this danger only through greater consciousness.

Many young women start out in life with a real desire to serve their generation, and their high idealism appears at first sight very like the man's devotion to an idea. They are eager for instance to serve the cause of justice or mercy or freedom. But their love of these things is subtly different from the man's. Year by year they fill the ranks of teachers,

nurses, and social workers. Such a young woman starts on her career with a fund of sympathy for others. She tries to relate herself to the sorrows of the world by her feeling. Just as in the ordinary domestic circle the woman knows a thousand things to do in case of trouble, while the man merely feels embarrassed or in the way (unless the trouble is one that a cheque can cure), so in the larger circle of a hospital or social workers' bureau, she tries to alleviate suffering by giving of herself and her feeling. But such suffering is endless and she is soon in danger of being overwhelmed by the crushing weight of misery that she meets day after day. The more sensitive girls are crushed by the problem and either seek a different sphere of activity or fall into neurosis. The more sturdy may react by developing a protective hardness, which no misery and no appeal can penetrate. In this case fear of the intensity of her own feeling reactions may throw the woman over into an animus attitude, when she will attempt to meet the suffering of her patients, and, indeed, her own "softness," as she would call it, by animus opinions. She may say, "It is the lot of man to suffer. What are you making such a fuss about?" Only a minority of women find that real adaptation to life and to humanity at large which comes by no other way than through the recognition of a value, which is superior to those personal ones which guide a woman in her individual life.

A supra-personal value has power to rescue a woman from the impasse, on the one hand of being overwhelmed or, on the other, of becoming hard, when it is accepted as supreme, for then it transcends not only her own personal life and desires but also the personal needs of those whose suffering has so painfully affected her. In by-gone days women found such a supra-personal value in their religion. They found relief from their too great suffering by casting

their burden on the Lord or by communing with Our Lady of Sorrows. Today, in the realm of psychology we recognize that it is only by something which we must call a "religious attitude," that a woman can differentiate between her own personal feeling and "the Whole Great World's Sorrow." Her share of this great world burden she must be prepared to assume, but she cannot carry it all. The "dew-drop slips into the shining sea" and loses itself, yet finds itself for it is filled by that same water whose bulk makes up the sea. Just as the dewdrop surrenders itself in the ocean so can a woman when an emotional experience of something greater than the individual threatens to overwhelm her, perhaps find herself through a voluntary surrender of herself and her own personal wishes for the fulfilment of Life itself. This surrender is not a self-martyrdom. To surrender herself to life is profoundly right for the woman. It is her way and brings her joy. For Life is only fulfilled through the little life of each individual, through the historic sequence of individuals. This impersonal life lives in herself no less than in all humanity. By putting the fulfilment of Life before her personal needs and satisfactions, she takes a step towards the solution of the problem of sorrow and evil. I recall a dream which illustrates this point. The dreamer was a woman whose work had led her into close contact with the sufferers in a wide spread calamity. At first she had been crushed by the suffering which she could not relieve. Then she had tried to repress her feeling, thinking it the only way in which she could carry on. Later it became necessary for her to try to assimilate the whole experience. As a first step in this process the repressed feeling came up and threatened again to crush her; it was as though each incident she had witnessed was her own personal grief. One day she dreamed that she saw horses circling through the sky. This reminded her of a picture of

the zodiac which she had seen the preceding day. Then she dreamed of a race course on earth like that in the sky, with animals going round in the different segments of the course. There were various kinds of animals — a sheep, a bull, and the like. She noticed particularly a horse. This scene faded, and in her dream she found herself at home. She picked up her watch from the floor and saw that it was broken completely in two. Her associations to the dream were that the race course was like a sundial, and also like the circle of the zodiac. It thus represented a year-clock, a measure of time by years; she spoke of the precession of the equinoxes which refers to time in terms of centuries. This clock is, as it were, the clock of history. In her dream this clock of history is functioning, but she discovers that her own personal timepiece, which would ordinarily mark out the days of her life, has been completely broken. The dream marked the beginning of a change of attitude towards the suffering she had witnessed.

If women are to see their personal problems in true perspective, it is absolutely essential that they learn to take things impersonally, while not losing touch with their own feeling. Otherwise, they are hopelessly caught in the network of the personal, and have to suffer as though it were a personal fate, or even a personal fault, things which really belong to the fate of a generation and are rightfully the burden of society.

To our dreamer the unconscious said, "You must not look at life any longer from the point of view only of your personal life span. Life from the point of view of history has other meanings."

---

## CHAPTER IV

### *FRIENDSHIP*

IN HER close relations with men a woman is always tempted to play the part of anima. Pressure comes to her both from without and from within to play this rôle, for the man wants a woman to fulfil his ideal of womanhood. He has a pattern of what a woman should be and how she should react to him, which is either held as a conscious ideal or functions as an unconscious compulsion of which he himself is unaware. This pattern is perpetually held up to the woman. If she does not fill it, he will have none of her or will try to force her into conformity. She is compelled by his set purpose and at the same time by an inner urge, to give him what he wants, to fit herself to his requirements. She wants to play anima to him exactly as much as he wants it, for this is the pattern through which the biological needs of both man and woman have been cared for throughout the ages.

But a relation based on the projection of the anima must, of necessity, remain largely unconscious, a tendency which is increased by the functioning of the woman's animus. If her relation to her animus has not undergone a process of redemption, it always lures her to look for values over the horizon. The Ghostly Lover calls her to follow him up into the clouds on a false scent. The man of promise, the man "with the words," enchants her so that she does not stop to make actual the values which she senses, but, like the dog in Æsop's fable, throws away the reality, hoping to grasp the reflection which looks so much larger. Her instinct to

play anima to the man and her own inner tendency to follow the Ghostly Lover combine to keep the relation between man and woman *unreal*.

So strong are the powers of unconsciousness wielded by anima and animus that human relationship would seem to be doomed to remain unreal were it not that another factor bringing potentialities of development as yet untried came into the situation. Had the relation between man and woman remained the only vitally significant one, the progress of humanity might have been blocked and the path to the evolution of consciousness which relationship opens up might have remained closed. But times changed. Women were forced out into the world. Marriage no longer offered the only career for them. Many women, and those by no means only the failures and the "left overs," remained unmarried for a part of their adult lives, in many cases for the whole. These women far from being the weaklings, the stupid, or unattractive members of their generation may be the most vital and enterprising, the ones with greatest intelligence and initiative.

Among women of this class friendship has come to hold a place of unprecedented importance. The relationships that are to be found between such women are often of a very high type, and may be exceedingly free both psychologically and materially — free, that is, from ulterior motives. For unlike a relation of equal importance between a man and a woman, these relationships do not involve financial dependence of one on the other, nor do they involve any obligation for the mutual satisfaction of instinct. There is no legal tie, no contract, no social demand. The association is based on human liking and on the attraction of one personality for another, on mutual interests and on an inner psychological or spiritual accord which is more important

in friendship than either sexual involvement or mutual interests.

This psychological or human factor is, however, very vulnerable. If it is to be safeguarded from the destructive effects of projections and illusions, definite work has to be done on the *structure* of the relationship itself. The relationship has to be given body—to be made actual or concrete. This is peculiarly the woman's task. It means the bringing to birth of feminine values as a reality in the world of reality.

In speaking of feminine values and of woman's cultural task one is open to the criticism of using empty phrases. It is so easy to *say* that woman must bring into life specifically feminine values which shall release her from dependence on man or competition with him, but it is exceedingly difficult to define with any clarity exactly what these are or where they may be found. The difficulty is increased because of the very nature of these values which are *so* different from the masculine ones that they can neither be appreciated when judged from the masculine point of view nor, indeed, can they in many cases be recognized as values at all. Women's values do not enter into competition with those which men have differentiated through the ages. They are dependent on them only to the extent that a woman cannot act as a pioneer in differentiating conscious feminine, or Eros, values from the realm dominated by unconscious instinct, unless she has in some measure acquired the capacity for thought, judgement and efficiency, which belong to the Logos sphere. To this extent the new values *are* dependent on the old.

It was essential that these new Eros values should be differentiated from the instinctual feminine of the anima rôle before they could enjoy a separate existence. For this reason it is not surprising to find that they make their first inde-

pendent appearance in a realm where instinct plays a lesser part than in the relation between men and women, namely in the sphere of women's friendships.

Certain women find it difficult to get onto an understanding basis with men, but with women they are at ease and readily establish a friendship. Attraction between members of the same sex, based on a feeling rapport, is a usual condition among both boys and girls during their adolescent years, when these friendships form their closest emotional ties; they are living through a homosexual phase which is entirely normal. Later in life friendship and love for some member of the other sex usually displaces this earlier love but the phase of emotional development which gives rise to these friendships is not confined to early youth. The instinctual love of which it is a manifestation may yield its *primary* place to another instinctual bond, but love for friends usually persists throughout life and is often of great importance in the emotional experience of the individual.

In these modern times when the period of immaturity is greatly prolonged, the emotional development of young people is often correspondingly retarded. If in adult life the love of friends continues to take first place, the condition is often due to a prolongation of an emotional phase normal to adolescence, which passes when it has been lived through. Retarded development of this kind will account for a certain number of homosexual friendships among women, but hardly for all.

At certain periods in the past the tendency of men to seek the friendship of men increased to a remarkable degree. For instance, at the time of the foundation of the *Polis*, the independent city state, Greek civilization witnessed a movement of this kind. The love of men for boys was exalted in the cultural ideal above even the love of man for maid. Plato's symposium on this subject has remained through the ages



as the outstanding example of the spiritual heights to which human love might attain. Some centuries later, in Europe, a similar condition prevailed. Men, in the age of Chivalry, congregated in Guilds of Knights — Knights of the Round Table or Knights Templars — and it was the ambition of every promising boy to become page and later squire to some knight of renown.

The result of these periods of devotion between men was a great increase in the strength and significance of the manly virtues and a corresponding decrease in the purely physical involvement of men in instinctual satisfaction with women. It was an integral part of the movement of Chivalry that the European woman's position underwent a marked change. Up to that time, she had been considered by men principally in the light of a household necessity, she was housewife, sexual object, bearer of children. When men's interest started on a new phase of development, centring round their activities with their men friends, they began simultaneously to idealize woman; she became for them a carrier of spiritual values, a symbol of the life of the soul. The emotional friendships between men characteristic of the time were a part of a cultural movement resulting, on the one hand, in a development of sex-solidarity and, on the other, in a change in man's attitude toward woman.

In the last fifty years friendships between women have come in a similar way to hold a place of unprecedented importance in the community. This change in the emotional life of women is significant not only for the individual but also for our whole civilization, for we are passing today through a distinct phase of culture like those which affected men so profoundly in the past.

One cause of this phase is the weakness and lack of development of the specifically feminine values, inevitable while women were exclusively occupied with men; the out-

come promises an increased solidarity amongst women, resulting in an entirely new development of those values which have to do with feeling and relationship. This change in women, according to the historical precedent, should also modify and revivify the relations of men and women to each other.

Friendships between women sufficiently important to warrant the formation of a family or household unit are exceedingly numerous today. It is an extraordinary change in the structure of society which leads many hundreds of women, instead of marrying and raising a family, to make a major relationship with another woman. Many causes, economic, educational, and social, have contributed to produce this phenomenon. But if we are to understand its meaning, we must look below these external conditions to find the psychological changes which perhaps predetermine them.

The terms cause and effect must be abandoned while we occupy ourselves with the attempt to differentiate the various strands whose interweaving has brought about a modern revolution — a revolution which affects not only the lives of individuals but also the life of Society. If this is dealt with merely as a personal problem its cultural significance would be lost sight of and so the individual would be compelled to bear the burden of responsibility for a collective movement, a gradual change in the race of which the individual is but a manifestation. Viewed from this standpoint, those people whose experiences are limited to relationships with their own sex must be regarded as victims of a changing instinct, which may be racial disease or sickness, or may be, for all we know, only the awkwardness of an adolescent civilization changing from childhood to adult life. If this last is the case, the instinctual frustration with its inevitable suffering, which these individuals have to bear, must be considered the growing pains of Society.

The social change must, however, be studied in individuals. During this cultural epoch at the time of the movement for higher education and economic emancipation, a certain modification of character towards a masculine type began to be noticeable in many women. This movement resulted partly from a turning away from the frivolities of social life or from a home in which, because of modern inventions, there remained so little creative domestic work to interest them. In addition, there was also a very real turning away from the temptation to live on the purely domestic and instinctual side of life, which was the result of a psychological reorientation; it signified development in a direction new to that generation of women. Their greater seriousness of purpose was expressed in a greater simplicity of dress and in a surrender of the mannerisms and weaknesses which women had formerly cultivated to attract the attention of men. The early professional women affected, instead, a somewhat masculinized dress and manner, as well as certain masculine characteristics, which were not assumed but which really expressed a psychological fact, namely, that in these women there was developing an attitude of mind which had formerly been considered to belong typically and exclusively to men.

These changes in dress, manner, and interest have gone side by side with the increase in women's friendships which we are considering. They are alike manifestations of the need of a certain independence of men during the period in which woman was finding a new aspect of herself. The recent lengthening of hair and softening of styles of dress may perhaps presage a return to a more feminine psychology. As I write, this phase of development may be passing and another already preparing to take its place.

Before it passes, let us try to understand its significance.

instead of merely noting the incidental economic and social changes which accompany it, for from the historical point of view this phase of social behaviour must have an evolutionary significance which is both biological and psychological in its nature. Its biological significance I must leave to the eugenists. Its psychological significance bears strongly, however, on the theme of this book — the contribution which women have to bring to the new era of consciousness whose evolution characterizes our time.

Let us first consider the facts as they can be observed in everyday life. On every hand are to be seen instances where two women who have formerly lived alone in a club or residential hotel join forces and begin housekeeping together, at first, perhaps, largely as a matter of convenience. Women have a great need to take a hand in their own domestic affairs, but the cost of living by oneself, may be prohibitive. By uniting their resources two women may be able to make a home where they can entertain their friends and also satisfy their need for domesticity.

Now this is a very curious and amusing swing around the circle, for women went out of the home in revolt against the drudgery and monotony of domestic work. But the fact remains that from the very dawn of human life it has been woman's task to make the home and to care for it. Indeed, it is probably owing to woman's peculiar genius that such a thing as a home could be created at all. For countless generations and in all countries women have found their chief satisfaction in cooking, sewing, and supplying the bodily needs of themselves and their households. These tasks fulfil that side of woman's nature which is related to the Earth Mother, the universal provider, and when she is cut off entirely from this kind of activity, one side of her nature starves. So, sooner or later, many a woman who has been living in a collective institution decides that she can no

longer be just an insignificant member of the hive. She wishes to have a home of her own.

A ménage started with another woman in this way, as a matter of convenience, may be the beginning of a friendship between the two which gradually strengthens through the months until a real family unit is formed. Many women, however, set up housekeeping together on a different basis. The link between them is primarily one of friendship. Perhaps when they first met, they were deeply attracted to each other and on account of this feeling elected to make a home together. The bond between such friends is one not of convenience but of mutual love and their life together is consequently likely to be far richer, attaining a permanence and a stability equalled only in marriage.

The values of such a relationship, the daily companionship, the shared life interest, the "home," are in many ways comparable to those found in marriage. The necessity, also, of recognizing the shadow side of one's own personality which close contact with another human being imposes is a factor in women's relationships as in marriage. But the sexual love and mutual dependence of marriage make a far closer bond than is at all usual between friends. For instance, if the husband and wife should not be in harmony on any matter, even an important one, or if their interests are far apart the gap between them can still be bridged if their love is passionate. The situation between two women friends is very different. By their very nature women need above all things to keep the feeling atmosphere clear. If a misunderstanding arises they cannot be content to lay the problem aside or to gloss over the difficulty. They need, instead, to come to a mutual comprehension of each other: each must clarify her own attitude and reach an understanding of the other's motives and standpoint. This can only be done through a thorough discussion of the incident, what-

ever it may be. Such a discussion is hard work; it is by no means easy. But it leads to a recognition of the *truth* of the matter—the truth not so much of *fact* as of *feeling*. This kind of work on relationship lies peculiarly in the woman's sphere. It both bores and frightens most men, but through it a development of character in regard to Eros, or relatedness, is brought about which can only rarely be achieved in any other way. Women, through their mutual relationships, are beginning to evolve a new consciousness along these lines, comparable perhaps to the evolution of thinking which men have brought to pass through their concentrated attention to facts and truth.

Women who form their major relationship together not because of love but as a matter primarily of social or economic convenience find themselves also caught up into this cultural movement which is expressed in the mode of the day, but they have no understanding of its psychological significance. They "fall into" the mode, they do not consciously *choose* to mould their lives on this pattern in any directed way or for any conscious reason. Their action furnishes an example of the way in which "circumstances" or "the time" fulfils itself. The cultural significance of women's friendships is more than personal, but these women fall into line with the times for personal reasons. Those who see a value beyond the merely personal participate in the development of the culture of their time more consciously. They seek in their friendships for a new kind of relationship—for a *truth* in human situations which has a significance beyond personal likes or expediency, and through seeking this value, they consciously take part in the movement directed towards building up those feminine values which our culture has neglected.

This new attitude to relationships and feeling-truth is naturally applicable to the relations of men and women as

well as to those of women. But these new values are emerging in our day chiefly on account of the close associations of women, so largely brought about by social and economic forces. Women themselves are, for the most part, exceedingly undeveloped in their relationships and need the concentration of feminine interests. For the feminine values, the Eros, have remained in our culture in a primitive and unconscious state. It is hardly conceivable that any step forward could have been taken unless women had been forced to seek each other's company. Women, as well as men, would have perforce remained content with that degree of relatedness which could be produced by the sexual bond in an unconscious or instinctive way, without any aid from conscious and directed work.

As these new qualities begin to emerge, women are learning to value their women friends in an entirely new way. Men have not, up to the present, been forced by circumstance to make this exceedingly modern step in consciousness, and are still, for the most part, quite unable to give women the kind of emotional satisfaction and security which they can find with their women friends. This is not unnatural. Men have had to be leaders and teachers in the realms of thinking and in all those things which belong to the man's sphere. Women must take the lead and be prepared to teach in feeling matters for these belong to her sphere and form an essential part of her genius.

Women who have found these values of relationship for themselves want to bring them into their relations with men, but men rarely want them of their own accord. When a man, however, has been intrigued into learning the lesson, he recognizes the enhanced values which the deeper understanding brings to the relationship and would not voluntarily go back to the old unconsciousness. This is a hard road, however, for men, and one so foreign to their own

instinct that they can hardly be expected to be enthusiastic about it. For the sake of a dearly loved woman a man may be willing to essay it, but it will be a long time before men set out on their own initiative to create conscious relationships of that kind. Women do not, even after nearly a century of higher education, evolve new sciences or new philosophic systems. It is hardly likely that men will immediately embrace the new realm which women are here and there beginning to evolve.

These values of relationship, genuine and real though they are when developed in an actual living friendship, are, nevertheless, quite difficult to describe in abstract or general terms. A writer who uses such terms is always open to the reproach of using high-sounding words which have no actual or concrete meaning. This is a disadvantage that always dogs the expounder of new ways, for words only have a meaning to those who have themselves experienced the values for which the words stand. For those who have experienced this new kind of relationship, even in small measure, my words will have meaning. Those who have not made their relationships conscious may not understand at all what I am talking about. But if such a one is interested and will make the attempt to get reality into his nearest relationship he will, I venture to predict, find the key to what I have to say, through his own experience. In order to avoid using such apparently meaningless generalities, I will give concrete instances of situations which are sufficiently common to be within the personal experience of most of my readers.

In an association between two women, which begins as a matter of convenience, only the more superficial layers of the psyche are involved at first. The problems incidental to daily life and close quarters can be met by the exercise of ordinary politeness and good feeling. As the friendship



grows, however, deeper layers of the psyche may come to be involved, while the daily contacts may have reverberations beyond the surface reactions, so that, if the pitfall of repression is to be avoided, a greater frankness will be necessary, together with a willingness to accept and work on the emotions brought to light in the relationship, whatever they may be. If, for instance, the ego takes possession of the situation, so that a compulsive desire to dominate threatens their harmony, this must be clearly recognized and tackled, not only in its manifestations, the specific instances which brought it to light, but in its cause, namely, the determination to have one's own way at all costs. Only by such an attitude of frankness can the friends be sure that the situation between them is not being falsified by repression.

If the friendship between two women becomes permeated by love of a more emotional and instinctual character, there is a strong tendency to ignore the new element and, indeed, actually to remain unaware of its presence. When we come to speak of love between two people of the same sex, we immediately touch on a subject which is hedged about with prejudices and taboos. The very word *homosexuality* is such a bugaboo that it may hardly be mentioned in polite society. Yet, in dealing with this subject it can hardly be avoided. It is used today, however, in many different senses, so that in any discussion of friendships between two people of the same sex it is necessary to make clear exactly what is meant by the term.

The emotional involvement in a friendship may be intense in its character and yet be without physical expression. For love between women does not necessarily involve physical sexuality. Viewed from one angle such a friendship would not be called homosexual. Yet for women who have no sexual expression in their lives the repressed instinct is bound to colour their major relationship and give it that quality of

emotionality which is the earmark of erotic involvement even though no overt sexual acts, nor even conscious sexual impulses are present. Thus from a broader point of view it must be recognized that the emotion involved in such friendships is instinctual or sexual in its character. In other cases the love between friends may find its expression in a more specifically sexual fashion which, however, cannot be considered perverted if their actions are motivated by love.

There is unfortunately no word in general use which makes clear the distinction between these two situations. If it were not for the sinister connotation which clings to the term homosexuality, it might not be necessary to make a clear-cut distinction, but it does not seem right to refer to friendships of either character by a term which is linked in the mind of the public with debased practices and criminality, for they are often of a high moral and ethical quality. Yet in the absence of any other term, homosexual must serve.

In judging of any sexual relationship, whether homosexual or heterosexual, it must always be borne in mind that the quality of the emotion involved is the criterion of value rather than the nature of the accompanying physical expression. It is necessary to be cautious how we apply the term *perversion*. In a friendship between women there is a natural tendency to repress the element of erotic love, a tendency which is strengthened by the conventional horror in which the very idea of sexual love between women is held.

It is not that the friends consciously repress something which they really know. The problem goes deeper than this, for the sexuality may be repressed at a level below consciousness. Many people, women especially, never even dream of the possibility of this kind of involvement. Though, perhaps, I make a mistake in saying they do not dream of it, they are very likely to dream of it, but the possi-

bility itself is simply unthinkable. It cannot be entertained in consciousness and any evidence of its presence is ignored. The instinctual involvement, being repressed in this way, shows itself in a certain compulsive element which enters into the situation. The two women seem to be driven by an unseen force and compelled to create an emotional problem which shall be constantly present between them. The intensity which is not recognized in its true colours and is repressed disappears from consciousness but reappears in all sorts of other manifestations. For instance, it may show itself as an undue solicitude in regard to health or comfort; one friend may cosset and tend the other. "Dear, do put on your sweater," or "Eat a little more." The point gained may be quite unimportant, its significance lies in the emotional satisfaction gained through the personal involvement. The emotional concern may find its vent in disagreements and quarrels and in attempts at domination, both direct and indirect. Often the cause of the quarrel is trivial in the extreme. Each would be content with a solution in either direction. The intensity of interest is not in winning the argument, but in the mutual involvement which a quarrel permits.

Disputes of this nature may go on to a violent explosion or even to the point of an actual rupture of the friendship. The friends do not know why they quarrel, for the sexual element is entirely repressed, but they are urged on by a power beyond their control to strain at their bonds and to hurt one another, each, as it were, trying "to get something" out of the other. When a friendship breaks up in this way, the details may be most surprisingly sordid. Women whom one had thought of as gentle and cultured will suddenly show some of the characteristics of the wildcat. The compulsion to "get something" out of her friend, which has its roots in repressed sexuality, may find its expression in all

sorts of demands. Quarrels may arise, for instance, about business affairs or about the division of their common possessions which could be easily arranged with a little common sense and good will were it not for the unrecognized instinctual involvement.

When friendship goes deeper than mere comradeship, if the sexual element is frankly accepted, however, a more fundamental rapport becomes possible, and a relationship of greater depth and stability can be achieved. But, in order to work out a conscious, a psychological, relationship, the greatest honesty is necessary in regard to the true nature of their feeling for each other. If they do not refuse to face the problems it presents, the instinctual bond which arises between them may even strengthen their love. If they are willing to struggle along trying to understand the true motives and purposes of their impulses, they will probably find that the physical attraction, as such, recedes in power and proves to have been nature's way of forcing them to a realization of the importance of the bit of life they are to experience through each other. Psychologically speaking, the purpose of this kind of union is to strengthen the power of the feminine element in both women. When this is accomplished the natural polarity of the sexes begins to reassert itself, and they each turn towards men for this side of their fulfilment.

The friendship, however, usually survives this reorientation and continues to hold for the friends certain values which are rarely, if ever, experienced in a heterosexual relationship. The inner essence of friendship defies treatment in a psychological essay; it might be better depicted in a psychological novel, but for any real appreciation of its value, it must be experienced. It is only possible, therefore, in this discussion to hint at its living value and for the rest to speak of those everyday events and problems from whose

right handling relationship can be built up between two human beings who love each other.

Certain difficulties are more evident in a relation between two women than in one between a man and a woman. For instance, a tendency to rivalry may exist; or each may want the exclusive government on the feminine side, may try to force her partner to play the man's rôle; and the tendency to identification, which dogs all couples who live together, is likely to be particularly strong in this case. If two people love each other, they quite naturally want to be constantly together; they want to do the same things, they come to think in the same way; they entertain together; and indeed discuss everything together, even their friends' actions, and so come to hold the same views and in the end present a single face to society. A classical example of this kind of identification is to be seen in Ruth's love for Naomi. When she threw in her lot with the older woman she said, "Intreat me not to leave thee, or to return from following after thee; for whither thou goest I will go, and where thou lodgest I will lodge; thy people shall be my people, and thy God my God; where thou diest I will die, and there will I be buried." It is in this spirit that many friends start out in life together. Their acquaintances come to think of them as inseparable, they are dealt with as a unit, one is never invited out without the other. Neither ever comes home with fresh interests, for each has been to the same place; has met the same people. All of this increases their identification and leads to a sterilizing of the relationship. It is as though they have only one life between them, instead of two related lives. Only things which are separate, however, can be related—a point emphasized by Jung in his essay on marriage, where he says, "In order to be conscious of myself, I must be able to differentiate myself from others. Relationship can only take place where this differentiation

exists. . . With respect to unconscious contents no discrimination can take place, and, therefore, on this terrain no relationship can be established; here there still reigns the original unconscious condition of a primitive identity of the ego with others, in other words a complete absence of relationship." \* If two things are identical, they cannot be related. They flow into a sameness which is without energy or interest.

The question arises then, What can be done to forestall this stagnation in identification? Is there any way of preventing it, or is this the inevitable grave of relationship between any two individuals who are very closely associated? Human nature so intensely desires intimacy and union and longs so ardently to be understood that it is difficult to build up any real independence and uniqueness; loneliness and isolation are too hard to bear. Indeed, isolation and withdrawal from human companionship have their dangers too, which are as serious as those of too close association. To be remote and isolated brings no development. The problem then comes down to this, How can two people keep a sufficient distance and separateness so as not to lose themselves in identification with each other, and yet live sufficiently intimately so as not to fall into the egotism and unrelatedness of isolation within themselves?

This is a problem which naturally cannot be solved merely by sitting down and thinking it out. It involves time and growth. It is not a problem of a static adjustment; it is a problem in *life*. An adjustment between two individuals which is satisfactory today may be outgrown in a few years or even in a few weeks. Such a problem can only be solved "in the living"—*solvitur in ambulando*. Psychological development results through working on such a

\* Jung, C. G., *Contributions to Analytical Psychology*, p. 189. Harcourt, Brace & Company, 1928.

problem. All who wish their relationship to grow will encounter certain points of difficulty, however, which will need adjustment. Perhaps some of the pitfalls might be avoided if these were taken into consideration in the beginning.

One of the most frequent mistakes that women make in the arrangement of their life together is in failing to provide for a sufficient separateness. For example, they arrange to share all the rooms in common; a mistake hardly avoidable if they have to live in the confined space of a modern apartment. But, even where entirely separate rooms are available, each may want to be always accessible to her friend and so falls into the habit of leaving her door open. The time will come, however, when she wishes to be quite alone, then she hesitates to close the door for fear her friend will think the action a gesture intended to keep her out in a personal way, with a certain negative feeling. So the door is left open, and an unspoken rule grows up that "doors are left open," the only exception being when one friend is annoyed at the other or withdraws herself with a hostile implication. As a result each sooner or later begins to feel, if she is a sensitive person, that she can have no privacy from the other, that her very thoughts are not her own, that she may have no secrets from her friend.

But the fact is the deepest experiences of our inner life cannot be communicated. If one cannot have a secret, there are certain secret things from which one is shut out. Certain things in one's own psyche will not tolerate exposure. For instance, unformed thought-germs are like embryos, they must live for a long while in the hidden depths of a human psyche if they are to grow and mature. Therefore, if a woman persists in living constantly in the publicity of a relationship without secrets, it results that she will know only those things in herself which are suitable for publication. Inevitably her consciousness becomes shallow. If the

woman is an introvert, whose inner life is of great importance to her, there will, in the course of time, grow up within her either a conscious or an unconscious reaction to this devastating publicity. She will find herself becoming the victim of thoughts which, indeed, must be kept secret. She will begin to have great resistances against her friend, will begin to hate the sight of her, to wish her out of the house, perhaps even to wish her dead. Now she cannot withdraw herself, for the negative feeling just below the surface would surely become evident to her friend whom she does not really hate, whom, indeed, she really loves and cherishes and around whose love and companionship her very life is built. She will probably force herself to openness and accessibility once more, and go even a step further into identification in order to compensate for her feelings of violent withdrawal. In such a case as this the bonds of love become in very truth bonds, which are hard to break and ill to bear.

Obviously this kind of situation contains dynamite and it is only a matter of time before something destructive will happen. An arrangement for separateness made at the beginning of the association would have avoided much of the difficulty. If the two had realized that a relationship can only be formed between separate individuals they would have made an agreement to leave each other some privacy. But the very need for privacy, for separateness, is an outcome of psychological growth. Undeveloped people and children are collective in their needs. They may be able to live and work and sleep in groups without violating anything within them. There is in America today almost a cult of the "group." The houses are frequently built with all the rooms opening one out of another, often only curtains divide them. All of the family share all of the rooms. It is part of the national quest of the "best for all" instead of something less than the best for each, which some would much prefer.



Many who live in this collective fashion are content not only to live in houses whose rooms are all public but, even when they are alone, allow their privacy to be intruded upon by an unseen visitor who keeps up a perpetual conversation via the radio. In such an atmosphere psychological development of the individual is impossible. For privacy is a fundamental human need without which there is no individuality; anyone who lives always with others can only function collectively. By collective functioning I mean functioning according to a rôle, whose characteristics and limits are already defined, having been laid down by custom. For instance a woman functions collectively as "a wife" or "a mother," "a friend," "a citizen," "a lady" or a "good sport." In order to live her life according to one of these rôles a woman must know, either consciously or unconsciously the rules, so to speak, of the collective pattern, but no demand is made on her for consciousness of what the situation really is nor of how she really feels. She needs only to know how things "ought to be"; how she "ought to act"; what feelings are appropriate.

The collective side of her psyche can function in a general situation up to this point, by making use of the rules of the average or the normal. No living creature, however, is quite average—every human being only approximates the normal. If two women live together at close quarters, the failure of each to live up to her standard will sooner or later become apparent. Consciousness of her own deviations from the conventional picture of "a good friend" or "a cultured woman," or whatever the collective pattern may be, forces on the woman a choice of attitude. Either, being unconscious of its true significance, she can discount her deviation from her standard as a part of the weakness of human nature, to be explained to her friend as a mistake, a failure to live up to an ideal, or sensing that much is at

stake, she may regard the deviation as more important. For in this very deviation she demonstrates that she does *not* function as a collective being — *a* woman — but as an individual — *this* particular woman. The adjustment with her friend must be based on the recognition that she is a separate entity with the right to an individual name, and is shown to be so by her very failure to live according to a collective standard. Thus out of close contact with another human being and the disillusion which results, the possibility arises of recognizing both herself and her partner as individuals.

If a woman lives only as a member of a group she may retain her ideal of herself but she lives only collectively. The only things she may recognize and approve in herself are those which are similar to or identical with the general characteristics. She is reduced to the least common denominator of the group. She may be a good member or a bad member, yet in the final analysis she is just *a* woman. As soon, however, as she begins to live in a close relationship, apart, with one other human being, she is compelled to differentiate within herself, *the* individual woman. Stated in reverse and with equal logic: as soon as a woman begins to differentiate herself from the other members of the group, *not by personal peculiarities but by individual reactions*, the possibility and, indeed, necessity arises of developing relationship in place of her former identifications. The original state of primitive unconscious one-ness in the group is identification. When the individual members of the group begin to develop a consciousness of themselves as separate, this one-ness is split up into a duality, a pair of opposites, which are bound together just as all the other opposites, for instance, "above and below" or "right and wrong," are bound together. The opposites into which identification is split are *individuality* and *relationship*.

Most people have a longing for close friendship and in-

timacy, indeed, for a relationship, a longing which has deeper roots than we are accustomed to think. The reason for this urge or longing is perhaps to be understood in the light of a craving of the psyche for individual differentiation. The longing for sexual love, marriage, and children is based, we are all aware, on more fundamental necessities than the fulfilment of the needs and desires of the individual. Here we recognize the workings of a racial or evolutionary law which gives the biological aims of life precedence over the personal aims of the individual. Over and over again, it may be seen how an individual man or woman can be caught by this biological urge and carried forward over all obstacles until the biological aim of the instinct for reproduction is satisfied, even if it leads him into a marriage which personally speaking may be disastrous. But man is not only an animal with biological life-aims. He is also a psychological being. Yet he did not invent or create his own psychological nature. The mind, the spirit, the psyche of man is a result of an evolutionary life-process, similar, we must suppose, to that which resulted in his bodily form. This psyche appeared without the volition or intervention of man and, indeed, without his conscious knowledge of what was taking place. This side of man's nature arose and developed, so far as we know, autonomously and by a self-regulating process, similar to the biological life-processes. Thus, in this realm we are justified in saying that man is subject to the workings of psychological life-aims. We speak of a *biological* life-aim without postulating a conscious, a personified, or an anthropomorphic mind or will in physical evolution. So, when I speak of a *psychological* life-aim, it must be understood that I am not postulating a conscious mind or will, either in man or in a deity which, as it were, conceives or holds the "aim," but, using the analogy of the biological life-aim, I am suggesting that there is also a

psychological life-aim which can be observed empirically in individuals. If we are permitted to observe the inner life of any individual, we shall find that even as the young man or young woman is hurried into marriage by the pressure of the biological urge of which he may, none the less, be unaware, so in the psychological realm also, events follow in a sequence which urges him forward unerringly towards a psychological goal.

The longing which most people have for companionship is a psychological urge comparable to the biological ones, it functions after the pattern of a life-aim, pushing the individual forward into a relationship. The woman acting on such an urge may explain her action to herself in terms of expediency. "It is more convenient than to live alone." "It is less expensive." "It is generally advisable," and the like. These are her conscious motives. But life has other axes to grind. No sooner has she entered into a close association than she finds herself caught with an important decision to make. If she cannot face the demand the situation puts upon her for consciousness of herself as apart from, other than, a representative of the collective standard, she may choose to retire from the situation, but she must then withdraw into isolation again. That she cannot do without serious regression. She *has* to go on. She *must* work on the relationship or choose regression which is psychological death. If she decides to go on and face the difficulties of the relationship she will immediately find herself obliged to initiate a separation — a conscious discrimination — between herself and her friend. She is compelled to find herself as an individual. Each step which she takes in differentiating her-self from the collective pattern forces her, whether she will or not, to "go at it again" with her friend, and so to differentiate the relationship a little further. Life has caught her. She has become the tool of one of life's

purposes. It is apparently a law of life that living things may not stagnate — they must evolve. Thus we see that her isolation and loneliness force a woman to companionship and that companionship, in its turn, compels her to find what and who she really is. This dual movement towards differentiation and development in the psychological realm, is apparently a life-aim which functions regularly. In the lives of some the psychological life-aim moves in the same direction as the biological life-aim. For them, fulfilment in both realms of life can be attained simultaneously. But, in some instances, the two urges are opposed. When this is the case, the opposition produces a conflict in the individual, which may be devastatingly severe. As an example, I shall cite a typical situation, several instances of which have come under my notice.

A woman has a friend of her own sex — perhaps she is living with her — when a man appears on the scene who asks her to marry him. Loyalty to her friend and the greater consciousness which in certain instances is promised in the relationship call her to devote her life to her friendship. On the other hand, the biological urge and conventional opinion combine to persuade her to marriage, even though, because of the particular relation with the man, consciousness and psychological development may have to take a very secondary place. I do not mean to imply that in every case the friendship holds more psychological values than the marriage, for the reverse may be true. But I instance a situation where the weight of the psychological values is in favour of the friendship. For when these two things — friendship and marriage — come into conflict there is always a great tendency to choose marriage, not only on account of the biological urge to fulfil the fate of wife and mother, but also on account of the weight of the conventional evaluation which works from within the individual's

psyche, no less than through the opinion of society. In such a conflict the individual must make a choice, and from the severity of the conflict which often results in such a dilemma, we can glimpse the strength of this psychological life-aim which is here in direct opposition to one of the strongest and most imperious of the biological life-aims. The fact that it is impossible in any given instance to foretell which aim will get the upper hand and be followed, or to foretell whether subsequent events will or will not justify the choice, demonstrates that these psychological life-aims have a validity for life, which in their own sphere is paramount.

In those cases where the friendship is chosen the relation between the woman and her friend carries a weight and importance which cannot be lightly dismissed. These two women choose to make their major relation in life together. Their friendship will tend to follow some general or archetypal pattern until such time as they have developed a conscious differentiation of their own individualities in the way described above. Two distinct types of relation can be commonly observed. In the first, based on the pattern of a marriage, the masculine rôle is played persistently by one, while the feminine part is played by the other. Unless through this experience the masculine woman can capture her own feminine values her emotional development has a great tendency to remain static. Usually she lives in the joy and rapture of the transference to her friend of the moment and refuses to work on the difficulties which arise between them, becoming involved instead with one woman after another. She is unwilling to sacrifice the pleasure which the condition of being "in love" brings to her and so cannot assimilate the feminine values projected to her friend. When during the process of living in a close relationship, her projection is challenged in the way described above, she withdraws hurt and will even break the rela-

tionship rather than make any inner change. In a short time she will be caught in a similar situation with another woman. This type of woman is never termed manly, whatever her age may be; she is spoken of as "boyish," implying that she is held on this side of her character in an adolescent stage. Her failure to assimilate the feminine principle is like an eternal infantility. The recurrent transference to a woman followed by the inevitable break-up is of the nature of a regression. Such women are persistently adolescent; they will not or cannot grow up.

The other woman who has played the feminine rôle, does not, as a rule, function after the psychological pattern of wife but is either child or mother to her boyish friend. Her condition resembles that to be found in the other type of close friendship between two women, based on the relation between mother and daughter. In this situation neither woman is markedly masculine in appearance or in interests, and neither plays exclusively the active part in the relationship. The pattern of mother-daughter constitutes a perpetual danger, however, to the psychological growth of the friends, for it tends to hold at least one of them, and generally each of them alternately, in the position of child to mother.

If a woman has not had a satisfactory relation to her own mother, she is unable to learn what her mother might perhaps have taught her of the woman's heritage of racial wisdom, which can only be taught through close association and understanding, not through precept. Or, if the mother herself is not a very feminine person, she may be quite unable to give her daughter what she needs. In either case there results for the daughter a weakness on the feminine side, so that if she is to grow to full maturity, she needs a relation to a woman.

But the maternal factor in the relation between two

friends has dangers as well as undoubted values. For every human being has within his breast a great regressive longing, a reaching back to the mother. We are all not unlike the little girl who at the age of two went to stay with her grandmother. When her mother came to take her home, as was to be expected, she regressed to the baby phase she had just begun to outgrow and refused to feed herself. Her grandmother said to her, "Why, Lucy, you are a big girl now. Why don't you eat up your cereal?" The child made no reply, but a little later she was heard to say to her doll: "Dolly, some folks thinks you ought to be a big girl now, but I doesn't think you need quite yet." Just as this little girl was afraid to break her childish relation to her mother so a woman may dread the thought of breaking her childish relation to her mother-friend, for fear of losing the love and warmth which the relation to a womanly woman has brought to her, perhaps for the first time in her life. But only by working out of the dependence in her relation to her friend and so redeeming her childish love can she acquire her own feminine and feeling values.

If, however, the friends are willing to make conscious their reactions in every situation which arises between them, these "patterns" will soon prove to be inadequate and the necessity will arise to transcend the inherited form and create a conscious psychological relationship to each other. This is a new creation and inaugurates a new phase of emotional development and experience of which only the higher types of women are capable. Friendships of this kind are commonest among self-supporting women who have devoted much of their energy to making an adaptation in the world of work. It is in such cases that the exclusive orientation to women is most likely to be temporary, although the friendship between the two may be stable and permanent. For it is women of this type who gain most readily the values



to be won from a love relationship with another woman. The very qualities which enabled them as young women to launch out on an independent career guarantee that they will work for reality and consciousness in their intimate relationships, and, by so doing, they will gain for themselves the feminine and feeling value which they formerly sacrificed when they chose a career instead of marriage.

Among married women friendships with women are not usually regarded as very important, but they may occasionally loom large and through them a consciousness of values in relationship may be developed which can be applied to the marriage relation in a way which enhances its significance. It is rather unusual, however, for a married woman to take feelings of this nature very seriously. For when once she has established herself in a marriage with the love of husband and children and all the associated social prestige, she has little urge to take up the undeveloped side of her psyche. It is, indeed, an exceptional woman who attempts it. Life's good things come to her without effort; there is no urgent call to strive for that development which would enable her to create them for herself. The married woman rarely realizes the lack of individual development which makes her but a dull friend to the woman who is developed on this side. Yet occasionally, perhaps in later life when her children have left her, or when she is thrown back on her own resources by the death of her husband, a married woman may take up her own psychological development and so may be led to explore those parts of her psyche which are conventionally less acceptable.

If we question the vigorous unmarried women characteristic of today, we shall find that a large proportion of them could have married. They refused because they wanted something different from the usual, conventional marriage or they wanted first to try their own wings in college or

work. They looked at the lives of their married sisters and friends and found them unutterably dull. They put marriage off till some day in the future, but did not realize at the time the difficulty they were letting themselves in for. They wanted the relationship when they should marry to be deeper and more real and so through the years of their work, they sought for maturity and development. But the men of their group continued to make the old type of marriage with all its collective values and its lack of demand on the side of relationship. So, when these women found themselves, at the age of thirty or thirty-five, at last ready for marriage, the men of their own age were already married.

Three choices for the fulfilment of the emotional side of life were still open to them. They could enter into an extra-marital relation with a man. Or, they could marry a man much younger than themselves (this solution of the problem is a very frequent one in America today). Or, they could turn to their women friends and seek through friendship to satisfy their emotional needs. This is the road which many of them have taken.

Thus friendships among women are a part of the same trend which became manifest in the social revolution of the last eighty or one hundred years. They have their roots in social and racial movements of far-reaching significance, such as the changed economic conditions, resulting from the mechanization of industry, in the education and financial emancipation of women, and also in the related psychological changes which took place in the women themselves. The increase of homosexual friendships amongst women must be considered as a transitional phase of civilization. Perhaps it is *womanhood* that is passing through adolescence in regard to individual development. This trend in society is, perhaps, a symptom of racial evolution, while in each

particular friendship, the friends may become mature — rounded out psychologically — through this very experience.

THESE racial movements must be regarded without prejudice. We must seek their psychological goal and significance — their creative quota — and not regard them from the *a priori* standards with which they conflict. When we find large numbers of responsible, vigorous and adequate women rejecting marriage, which has been considered the most developed state, and “regressing” to intense relationships with other women, we recognize that they must be searching for something whether they are aware of it or not. Marriage represents an adaptation to the sexual and reproductive instincts of humanity and is, without question, a mature adaptation on the biological plane. But this step back is, as we have seen, related to a movement directed towards a psychological development in women by which a more conscious and developed relationship becomes possible. The movement is biologically a regression, but psychologically has a progressive significance. In the old type of marriage a woman lived only for the collective values of wife and mother, and apart from marriage had practically no place in society; the individual side of her nature was entirely undeveloped and was represented in her unconscious masculine soul, her animus, which was projected to her husband. When, however, she began to develop her own individual and masculine values, she lived the masculine side of herself in reality, submitting it to discipline. She no longer projected it in the old exclusive way upon a man. As a result, she found herself unable any longer to live just as his anima, his counterpart, but was obliged to set out in the world for herself. In this phase of her evolution, for psychological as well as social reasons, friendship with an-

other woman was the only form of emotional experience open to her. Consequently, relationships became very common among those women who were seeking a fuller development and maturity.

From the biological standpoint this movement towards friendship must be considered a regressive phase of civilization, for on account of it, many potential wives and mothers have remained unmarried. Yet regarded from a psychological and cultural angle, it reveals itself as a *reculer pour mieux sauter* — a drawing back to get a fresh start. For through this step many a woman in the past has succeeded in escaping from the condition which demanded that she live only as man's counterpart, personifying his anima, into a life of fuller opportunity for personal development. Possibly this movement of society may also foreshadow the escape of the woman of the future — indeed, of womanhood itself — from the condition of psychological onesidedness which her unconscious relation to man has imposed, and may presage a freer life in which she will find herself as a conscious and complete individual.

A new thing never arises from the highest place but always from a lower. The change in relation between men and women, brewing for many years, has been preceded by a step back from the stage of conventional marriage in order that a new and more individual capacity might be developed in woman in her own realm. Only when this has been attained, can she achieve conscious relationship with a man.

---

## CHAPTER V

### *MARRIAGE*

ALMOST every woman wants to marry, for marriage seems to offer the best opportunity for fulfilment in life. Not only does it promise the daily companionship of the man she loves, with a satisfaction deeper and richer than mere companionship, and give her the right to bear and rear their children and so satisfy her own maternal instinct, but it promises also, when the glamour of youth and the struggle of middle life are past, the hope of evening-years of closest intimacy with the one who is dearer to her even than herself. Through a shared life-experience, the opportunity arises to explore the hidden depths of another individual — to learn to know and love another in his weakness and in his strength. The beautiful words of the marriage service: “for richer, for poorer, in sickness and in health until death,” refer not only to the material world, but to the psychological as well, not only to the outer life but also to the inner.

A picture of marriage drawn on such ample lines, the lights and shadows giving scope for the exploration of love in all its varieties — love that is joyous, love that is tender, love that gives, and love that receives — forms a cherished part of the dream of most girls. Sometimes the marriage which the young woman actually finds fulfils her ideal, but such marriages go their way without noise or notoriety. It has been said that the country which is without history is the happiest, and the same is perhaps true of that lesser “state,” the family. These marriages do not come di-

rectly under the scrutiny of the practicing psychologist.

Other marriages, however, fall short not only of the *ideal* but also of a more modest requirement. The girl sees so clearly what she would like her marriage to be, but only rarely has she any idea how to make her dream come true. She does not know how to bring to pass — to make concrete — the vision of love and mutual helpfulness, of intimacy and companionship, which forms the very core of marriage as she pictures it.

The question of marriage as a whole is too comprehensive to be discussed here, and this is not the place to consider the advantages of marriage over any other association between men and women, such as "companionate marriage" or "free love." Certain problems, however, which a woman encounters in adjusting herself to the position of wife in an ordinary, average marriage do need consideration here. Some of her problems will depend upon the nature of the individual relationship; others on general considerations which are taken for granted by everyone as a valid foundation for life. But as a matter of fact, subsequent events frequently show, either in domestic difficulties or in the revelations of a divorce proceeding that illusion and misunderstanding can come between two people, even the best meaning and most good-hearted, and that in matters which each had considered covered by the categories, personal relationship and love, on the one hand, and generally accepted standards of conduct, on the other.

When we see two young people pledging their troth at their wedding we assume that the experience of one will be the reciprocal of the other, that they are "entering life together." This attitude implies that marriage is a thing in itself, an institution, and that the experience of it will be the same, or approximately the same, to the man as to the

woman. A very little reflection, however, will convince us that this idea does not tally with the facts.

To the man, marriage belongs to his personal life. It has relatively little to do with his position in the community or with his relation to his work. But, to a woman the situation is entirely different; marriage is much more far-reaching in its effects. Her whole life is altered by it, her social status completely changed. There is a world of difference between whether she is Mrs. or Miss. As Mrs. So-and-so she is accepted by the world and accorded a deference and attention which she would never receive if she were still Miss. Marriage, to a woman, is an achievement; some women take it as the one thing required of them; having thus far succeeded, they may for the rest of their lives sit back and "take it easy." Whether her husband is satisfactory or not, a married woman, nevertheless, shows to the world the contented face of a human being who has arrived. A cynic is said to have remarked that many a woman has no other claim to personal distinction beyond this—that she once induced some man to marry her. One might add "God help him."

A woman who marries to gain a position in life proceeds, as a rule, to identify herself completely with her husband, taking his achievements as though they were her own. As a rule, if *he* has done anything worthy of distinction, *she* puts on airs. If he is elected to a position of honour she expects to receive a full share of the deference and respect he has won. I have heard such women say, "*We* are writing a book." "*We* built the new State House." They are upheld in this attitude by society. No matter how stupid or uninteresting the wife of a prominent man may be, or how disagreeable, she is invited by all those who welcome her husband to their homes. Her position in the world does not

depend upon her own efforts, either of work or of character, but only upon the achievements of her husband. The converse of this is also true. If the husband is a ne'er-do-well, the wife may be industrious, efficient and charming but their friends will only say, "Poor Mrs. So-and-so ! It is too bad she has such an unsatisfactory husband; she deserved something better than that." But they will not ask her to dinner when they are expecting guests whose husbands have been more successful.

On this account a woman's choice of a husband is influenced, consciously or unconsciously, by many factors — wealth, position, social prestige, and the like — which influence the man far less. It is true that a man's choice of a bride may also be affected by these considerations, but, as a rule, the man looks for his fulfilment on the instinctual and love side of his nature in his marriage and for his individual and ego fulfilment in his work and in the world. In considering marriage, a woman must take into account not only her personal inclinations but also whether or not the man will be able to support her and her children; whether, too, he is likely to make good in the community. For, in most instances, the woman looks to her marriage for the source of her entire satisfaction.

Until two or three generations ago these questions were considered quite openly by the parents of the girl. More recently they have been pushed into the background. Arranged marriages have been discarded in favour of those dependent on personal inclination; the love-match, especially in Anglo-Saxon countries, carries the popular sentiment. Marriage settlements and the young man's prospects, which occupied such a large place in marriage arrangements a hundred years ago, are now left largely to chance. The importance of these things was formerly held clearly in consciousness, but they were arranged by her parents, not



by the girl herself, for the bride must not appear worldly-minded. Today the girl makes her own arrangements far more often than formerly, but still she must not *appear* worldly-minded. Her marriage must be a love-match; personal inclination must still be all that ostensibly guides her. Yet these questions of money and social position are as important as ever. If they are not consciously taken care of, they will drop into the unconscious and control the situation from a hidden vantage point. This means a definite loss from the point of view of the individual's social adaptation. For if a girl disregards the worldly aspects of marriage, her preferences for certain men may well be guided by motives of which she is herself unaware. She may really be unconscious of the reasons for her likes and dislikes. She actually may not know that she prefers A because of his position in the world although his temper is vile, and she will be equally unaware that B, whom she might love, fails to get a response from her because "he is an artistic sort of chap, who is not likely to settle down permanently." If the matter stopped there, this might be all very well. But there is a grave risk that, having married A and secured a good home and social position, she may become aware of her starved feelings and then, if B is anywhere about, complications may ensue.

The woman *must* take these things into account. In this way only can she be freed from their unconscious compulsion and be enabled to examine honestly into the state of her feelings. If a woman who is about to make a worldly marriage acknowledges frankly to herself that she does not love her husband but that she wants the position he can give her, disaster is far less likely to follow than if she lets herself be duped into thinking she loves him by keeping her worldly wisdom in the background. But, naturally, many women who might be betrayed through their own uncon-

sciousness into making a worldly marriage would be horrified at this cold-blooded exploitation of the man's affections if they realized what their own motives were. Perhaps Nature, who is more concerned for the race than for the individual, plays a part in keeping the woman unaware of her true feelings. For if she will not take the worldly advantages into conscious consideration the welfare of herself and her children can best be assured through her ignorance of the nature of her feeling for the man.

The woman who is really conscious of these social considerations, and yet loves a man whose characteristics do not hold out very good social prospects, may be able to forego the worldly advantages and choose to marry the poor man, provided she knows what she is doing and counts the cost.

From the point of view of society, marriage is a social institution, like the family and the Church and, as such, comes under the ruling of certain general laws. The laws and customs which govern the general case apply also to the individual instance, but they cannot be expected to give complete guidance in regard to its management. Thus everyone has in the background of his mind an idea of marriage and its obligations, but most men and women would find it exceedingly difficult to formulate their ideas. As a legal contract, marriage and its requirements have been formulated in the Statute Book. But these rules and laws are necessarily generalized and refer only to external action, they cannot touch the more subtle realms of implicit action — thoughts, feelings, or even words. Faithfulness, for instance, is considered only in terms of physical sexuality; support is considered only in terms of shelter, food, and clothing; cruelty, at least in England, only in terms of physical violence. But these things represent the very minimum in our code of honour as it affects marriage. In the picture

which each one has of marriage, these formulated obligations have their place, but there are many others which are taken for granted — assumed as *of course* — although they remain unstated. If these assumptions were conscious they could be discussed before marriage, but their very *of course* character makes it seem unnecessary, even impertinent, to bring them into the open.

The idea of marriage is a generalized concept, but the generalization is not uniform. Each social group, each racial group, and each geographic group has its own assumption regarding the structure of the “institution of marriage,” and the idea of marriage varies in different small groups within the community to an amazing extent. The picture that each individual holds is modified by family tradition, by super-imposed pictures of marriage gleaned from novels and plays, by his own observations of the marriages of relatives and friends, and, especially, of the marriage of his parents. From such diverse sources an idea of marriage and its obligations is built up for each individual, an idea which he takes to be, not the highly personal and almost accidental composite it really is, but a universally valid standard. Because the underlying assumptions and prejudices are hardly recognized, they cannot be discussed by the pair before marriage, but they will surely lead to actions which to an onlooker may appear arbitrary or unreasonable. The total assumptions of any two people never tally exactly, and, indeed, masculine and feminine assumptions differ so that a clash of opinion between husband and wife is almost inevitable sooner or later. And this on some point which they have each assumed is accepted by all right-thinking people.

For instance, a young woman marries the man she loves because of his charm, his ability to say the right thing, and, perhaps not a little, because of the way he has in love-

making. She may have agreed to accept "love in a cottage." After the first glamour of their love has passed, however, old assumptions begin to reassert themselves. Something whispers that as wife she ought to be supported in the same style as her sisters or friends, that she has a right to expect the comforts she was used to at home, that if she has a baby — well, certainly her health must not be allowed to suffer ! In accordance with her feminine nature, she will probably bring these opinions to bear indirectly. While still saying that she accepts poverty, she yet makes her husband feel that he is a failure if he cannot give her the comforts and necessities that her friends have without question.

Possibly the difficulty takes another form, arising from unconsciousness of temperamental differences. If, for instance, her husband is of a thoughtful turn of mind and likes to round out his day of work with an evening's reading, while she is more sociable, her assumption that *of course* her husband should go out with her to parties, or that *of course* he must dress for dinner, and play the good host to her friends may be the source of endless controversy. This adjustment may never have been discussed before marriage. It was not a problem to her because she took his sociability for granted; it was not a problem to him because sociability of that order had never crossed his horizon.

His assumptions of what is naturally to be expected of a wife may prove just as disconcerting to her. His masculine tendency to systematize and to organize may drive her "nearly crazy." More than one woman has said to me: "It is golf on Saturday afternoon, and love-making on Sunday morning ! If he makes love to me again on a Sunday I shall scream !" But the man doubtless takes it as *of course* that when he is tired and concerned over business affairs he cannot be expected to make love to his wife. This does not mean he does not love her. But a woman feels that love

which is regulated by the calendar is only habit, and not *love* at all.

The man perhaps assumes that *of course* he can bring his friends home without warning and that his wife should be prepared to entertain them and make them welcome. It is true that it is his home as well as hers, but he forgets that the burden of the extra work falls on her or that she may have other plans. For instance, if the unexpected guests arrive on the maid's evening out his wife may feel hurt and resentful. These "little" things need very careful talking out, for each of the partners can so easily become a tyrant to the other, and that, all unwittingly. A man, in speaking of just such a problem between himself and his wife said, "Mary a tyrant? No Mary is not a tyrant!" Then with raised voice, "Mary is tyranny!"

The problem, however, goes deeper than this. It is not just a question of an adjustment which shall be fair to them both. A more subtle assumption underlies the masculine disregard for feminine values. A man may bring home not only his friends but also his business associates with whom he has no particular friendship. When he brings his friends he presumably wants his wife to make their acquaintance and her feminine values of relatedness are given a place, but when he brings home business associates, he does not want her to make friends with them, he simply wants her to look pretty and give a touch of feminine charm to the situation which is really a business and not a social one. He acts as if she were only a delightful part of his equipment and he expects her to be satisfied if the entertainment furthers his business enterprises. A woman can only fill this rôle by assuming an artificial manner. If she consents to play this part she must needs wear a mask, while the deeper side of her nature which requires her to create something of personal relatedness is, in the meantime, repudiated. If her

social life is built up largely on this pattern she becomes identified to the social mask, which Jung has called *persona*. *Persona* is the name of the mask which the Greek actors wore to depict the character they represented in the play. The choice of the term is particularly happy because the characters in the Greek theatre were all representations of social or collective rôles — as the *happy lover*, the *jealous wife*, the *well-loved father*. *Œdipus*, *Electra* and *Jocasta* are not individuals but types and would each have had a typical mask or *persona*. In daily life everyone has some mask or *persona* which he assumes whenever he feels obliged to hide his real features. If he wears it too often or too continuously, however, he loses his ability to discard it. The mask, his chosen rôle, becomes a permanent and invariable attribute. The man himself grows to be identical with his *persona*. This is the danger that threatens a wife who too often plays hostess to strangers with whom she can have nothing in common, while for reasons of expediency she acts as though they were her friends.

The masculine assumption that she should be willing to make use of her charms in this way seems to exclude her fundamental need; to her it is an exploitation of her feminine nature — yes, of her very soul — for the furtherance of his business. Only rarely does a woman realize *why* she is so annoyed at her husband's assumption, that she will, *of course*, be charming to his business acquaintances; she only feels exploited. He cannot for his part understand her unwillingness to comply with his wishes and thinks her selfish and unco-operative, which makes her angry and tends to alienate her. If she were aware of the causes of her own reaction, she could explain her point of view to her husband and a better understanding would result. Or, if he had confided in her at first, he would probably have enlisted her co-operation, for his success in business concerns her also,

their interests are identical, and her need for relationship would have been satisfied through the sense of partnership with him.

These assumptions, conscious and unconscious alike, may seriously jeopardize the harmony between married couples through the misunderstandings which they cause, but they frequently have another unfortunate effect on the relationship, on account of a curiously compulsive influence which they exert on the situation and which is stronger when the assumption is unconscious than when it is conscious. For the psychical energy tied up in the assumption acts as a vortex, so that everything in its neighbourhood is distorted. Their attraction produces an almost uncanny sense of unspoken demand — an unexpressed will to power.

For instance, an ambitious, or dominant, woman may unwittingly make a tremendous claim on her husband because she has to find her entire satisfaction through her marriage. He may feel her like a millstone round his neck, as though she were making a power demand on him which he could neither tolerate nor escape. This effect is sometimes increased by a deliberately undertaken policy. For example, the energies of many men have been forced into the single channel of money-making to satisfy the ambition of their wives, while, on the other hand, many a promising and efficient girl has been reduced to a mere shadow by the man's assumption that he, and he alone, is "head of the house."

The condition known as "falling in love" furnishes fertile soil for all these assumptions to grow up and flourish, for it carries with it a certain sense of identity with the loved object which makes the lovers feel that they are in some mysterious way akin, that they were meant for each other; that they understand each other even without the medium of speech. I once knew a couple who scarcely ever communicated with each other except by grunts and changes of

facial expression. They said, "Words are so clumsy and spoil everything." These two believed that they knew each other through and through and that no understanding between two human beings could be deeper.

A unity which is not based on experience of each other, but depends on a mysterious sense of kinship, comes from the projection of an unconscious part of the psyche upon the partner. The man sees in the woman his feminine counterpart, the reflection of his anima, his soul; while she sees in him her animus. The feeling of identity which arises between two people who love each other is very highly prized, for it rescues them from that sense of isolation and loneliness which is the portion of all who live as isolated individuals in the midst of the huge and indifferent crowd which makes up society. But since this sense of identity comes from a psychological projection and does not necessarily accord with facts, it lures the two into a false security. Neither is aware of any need to explore the territory between them and so each continues in complete ignorance of the partner's real character.

The illusion of at-one-ness is increased by the woman's tendency to fulfil the man's expectation of her. Every woman in love unconsciously adapts herself to the anima rôle. Even a woman who would be classed as an animus-type, with a clear idea of what she wants and a direct and frank way of going after it, will often drop her clear-cut manner when she falls in love and will become soft and pliant, sensitive to the man's every mood and responsive to all his wishes, expressed or implied. But a dramatic change of this kind is only a passing phase. Once safely married, the other side of her personality will reassert itself, and she may be as dismayed as her husband is to find that she has very definite ideas about many things which, formerly, she was quite willing to leave to his decision.



This tendency of the woman to accommodate herself to the man's idea of her is often augmented by a conscious attempt to "fit herself to be his wife," not only by perfecting herself in the domestic arts but, forsooth, in the subjects that belong to his sphere ! I remember one girl, a charming, pretty little thing, who became engaged to a professor of physics and believed it her duty to become a complete helpmeet for him. Her attempts to master the intricacies of mathematics did not enhance the value of the relationship, however, for he was not interested in discussing such things with her, but wanted something very different as a counterpoise to his over academic life.

When a girl passes through a temporary change in personality due to her involvement with her lover, she unconsciously deceives him as to her true character and disposition. The involuntary deception is increased by the illusion of love's proverbial blindness and constitutes a very real, though hidden, danger to the safety and permanence of her marriage. Unconsciousness of this sort is most extensive with young people whose experience of life and of themselves is so limited, but it is less dangerous for them than for more mature people, for as life challenges their assumptions they will replace them by more valid judgements which they have formed together.

Indeed the relative age and maturity of husband and wife determine the psychological situation of marriage to an extent insufficiently realized. The bride of fifty will have to meet problems unknown to a child wife of fifteen and the reverse is no less true. Several strange marriages have come to my notice where a discrepancy in age has been an outstanding feature. In one case a widower and his son married a widow and her daughter. At first sight there seems to be nothing very strange about the situation, except for the identification between parent and child, shown by

their marrying into the same family. But it is quite startling to hear that the father married the daughter and the mother the son! The problems of these two households, close as they were, would be utterly different, just as they would in another case where a father and son married two sisters. In these situations we have examples of three different kinds of marriage; the marriage of two young people, the marriage of a young woman and an older man, and the marriage of a young man and an older woman. I shall consider the outstanding problems in marriages of these types, but to complete the classification according to age, I must add the marriage of two older people.

Each of these four marriages has a typical problem and a peculiar psychological task. I speak of a marriage task beyond the generally recognized one of creating a means for the social and emotional adaptation of two people and of bringing children into the world and so caring for them that they also shall be adapted socially and emotionally, for marriage also imposes other tasks which have to do with the inner life and culture of individuals.

The marriage of a young couple who start life together in their later teens or early twenties will be considered first. The young man and woman in such a case have had little or no previous experience of life. This is probably their first close friendship. They will explore the world of love and of ideas hand in hand and will make their friends together. The only life they know apart from the home in which they grew up is the one they themselves build. Their love for each other starts as a mutual projection of anima and animus, which in their case often makes a successful basis for marriage. The assumption that they think alike on all questions matters relatively little here, for the ideas and attitudes of both are as yet hardly formed, but are still

fluid and will take definite shape only as a result of the experiences they will later encounter together.

But a marriage of this kind, stable and happy as it may prove to be, does not as a rule foster the psychological development of the two individuals, for it is based on identification, not on a conscious or psychological relationship. External problems tend to keep the man and woman who marry young very much occupied. As a rule, the task of making a home, of providing an income sufficient for their increasing needs, and of building up a social life, take all of their time and energy. The chances, too, are that babies will shortly arrive, necessitating a further expenditure of time and attention not only by the young mother who must bear them and tend them, but by the father, no less, who must provide the wherewithal for their support. Little leisure remains in which to become aware of the more subtle aspects of life. The problem, for instance, of their own psychological relationship does not obtrude itself very insistently until middle life when the children are off their hands and their financial position is established. During the middle forties many apparently stable and satisfactory marriages come to a place of great strain.\* Not infrequently a husband and wife after having lived together for fifteen years or more and having brought up a family discover quite suddenly that "they are no longer in love with each other." The realization of their fundamental lack of harmony and relationship may lead them even to the point of discussing the possibility of divorce. Many divorces, indeed, are actually obtained at this time—for no reason that seems to the onlooker either very apparent or very urgent. To those principally concerned it may seem sufficient to say, "But I

\* For a further discussion of this subject the reader is referred to an essay on marriage in C. G. Jung's *Contributions to Analytical Psychology*.

am no longer in love with him" or "with her." They do not seem to realize that "love" which has died in this fashion over night, has never been love at all. Certainly it is not a conscious relationship; it results from a projection, and when the projection is removed, or its illusion of reality dissipated, each finds himself confronting a complete stranger. The outcome shows that they have not successfully accomplished their life-task, which lies in resolving the projections of anima and animus and thereby integrating the personality by gradually absorbing the projected elements into the psyche. By a resolution of the projection the man gains his anima, his soul, as a complementary part of himself, of his own psyche, instead of its being merely reflected to him from his wife; and the woman, in the same way, takes into herself her animus which formerly she found only in the person of her husband. This is the typical problem of the adolescent marriage.

The second type may be called adult marriages. The man and woman are again approximately of the same age. In the adolescent group the boy is usually a little older than the girl; in the adult group there may be a similar age difference, but it is not so regularly in favour of the man. Marriages of men and women over thirty are a phenomenon of recent times. Until the middle of the last century, if a girl was not married before twenty-five, she was considered a hopeless old maid; today the number of women who marry after thirty-five is by no means inconsiderable. But marriage at this age is very different from the marriage of adolescents. The man and woman who have reached adult life unmarried have, naturally, lived; their ideas on most subjects are more or less clearly formed; their characters and habits are already crystallized; each has a circle of friends and activities which may be very different from or even incompatible with the other's. The woman who marries

late in life belongs, as a rule, to the group of business or professional women. She has made a career for herself, she is self-supporting and has been living an independent life away from her family. She is by no means willing to take her ideas second-hand from her husband. She has her own well-organized opinions on politics, religion, business, society, and all other matters of general interest, including divorce, free love, and prohibition. The marriage of these two does not mean, as it would if they were younger, that they will experience life and form their views together. They come to their marriage already experienced and if they are to get along together harmoniously they must form either a relationship which shall leave them free to hold their individual opinions or one which shall be built up through an understanding and respect for each other's views — a relationship based on their differences and not on their identity.

As a first step, it is most essential that the partners should talk out, as far as possible, all the ramifications of their association — finance, privacy, the right to see their friends alone, the obligations to unify their personal habits. These and many other matters must be discussed and, at the very least, a tentative agreement must be reached if the marriage is to escape shipwreck. Men and women about to marry often say: "We believe in a free marriage." When asked what they mean by a free marriage, they will put forward some advanced theories such as, "we do not consider ourselves bound to each other by any pledge of fidelity." But you may find that on all other points they are completely conventional in their assumptions, while remaining unaware that they assume anything.

As a rule, the man has one set of assumptions, the woman another which further complicates matters. Take, for instance, the matter of finance. They may have agreed that the woman shall continue in her career, and their incomes be

shared. "But," they may be asked, "what will you do if there are children?" The woman will reply, "Of course, my husband will support me while I am incapacitated, and naturally he will support the child afterwards." But the husband may say, "We have agreed that I am to supply half" — or two-thirds, or whatever the proportion may be — "of the household expenses, and that is all I am prepared to give." When the first child comes, the man will realize that he must support his wife, at least for a time; but now, far from acting on any "liberal" or "modern" theory of sharing alike, he quite likely falls back on an old model and does as his grandfather did before him — supplying his wife with money for housekeeping only. Consequently, she must ask him for every penny she spends for her own necessities. His assumptions of the obligations of marriage are entirely different from hers.

Another couple, when questioned about privacy, assert that *of course* married people share a room, although they may have been accustomed for many years to a room of their own and to being entirely alone for a large part of every twenty-four hours. If they allow themselves to be guided by their assumption of what married people *should* do a sense of suffocation is likely to arise owing to the too great intimacy. When this has happened they cannot bring the problem up, or insist on greater separation for fear of making real the breach which is already undermining their inner sense of union. The ways in which unconscious assumptions undermine the understanding of man and wife could be multiplied indefinitely, the cure in each case can only be found through greater frankness.

Adults generally begin their problem at the point which those who marry young reach only later. They, like the young people, will also have to take up the problem of the projection of anima and animus, in some measure, but this

comes to them usually as a minor rather than the major problem which is the relation between them. The fact that the marriage is more likely to be childless than is a youthful marriage, emphasizes the necessity of working on their intrinsic relationship. Children are a bond between the parents, but also serve as a "buffer state," keeping them apart. All too often parents avail themselves, perhaps unconsciously, of the presence of children to evade a direct psychological contact with each other which would necessitate their taking a step towards greater consciousness. This is not possible in a childless marriage where the typical problem is to work out a psychological relationship through which each may find himself and his partner as unique and conscious individuals. Thus the task is here to attain consciousness through relationship.

In the marriage between a young woman and a much older man, one of the chief motives influencing the girl is likely to be the desire to gain security. She wants to marry "a man whom she can trust," one already established in the community and of proved ability to provide for her. Generally speaking, in such a marriage affection takes the place of passion. The girl feels assured that not much will be demanded of her sexually. Her husband is almost like a father, the transition is easy, her whole girlhood's adaptation can be transferred intact to the new home. She gives affection and deference to her husband just as she did to her father. The pattern of the relation between father and daughter is carried on. The daughter-wife expects to be petted and humoured. The father-husband gives security and expects in return to keep all decisions in his own hands, while having a devoted but irresponsible child about the house. Psychologically this means that the girl has never released herself from the tie to her father; and that the man's anima is as childlike and undeveloped as is his child-wife.

This type of marriage, though still common, was perhaps the most usual up to the middle of the nineteenth century. It reflected the extreme childishness of women on the individual side and of men on the side of relationship, which the whole organization of society fostered. Dickens and, indeed, most of the novelists of his period described it as the ideal marriage, but it has become less universal as women have developed their own masculine and individual capacities. For now many women can win for themselves security through their own efforts and capabilities and do not need, in the same way, to seek for it in a husband. When a woman has learned to make her own decisions and to bring to pass by her own efforts what is necessary for her comfort and well-being she does not relish the idea of having these things decided for her, nor does she like to be dependent for their gratification on the bounty and good nature of a father-husband. Most significant of all, she is profoundly dissatisfied with the meagreness of a relationship which leaves her in the position of a child.

The typical problem in the father-daughter marriage lies in the necessity to resolve this psychological situation. The wife is caught in a position where her adaptation depends on her remaining a child, while her own evolution demands that she become adult. As long as she looks for security outside herself, in her husband, she cannot win her own individual values. Her task is to gain a relation to the masculine principle, or Logos, within herself and so to achieve her own maturity. In this way she will become a separate psychological entity, and the marriage will pass on to a different phase where the problems of psychological relationship can be taken up as between two individuals who are both mature even though there is a considerable difference between their ages.

The polar opposite of this type of marriage, namely, where



an older woman marries a younger man, is by no means uncommon in America today. Women who, instead of marrying, have chosen a profession and built up a place in society for themselves by their own work may find that the problem of marriage recurs when they reach thirty-five or forty, but on another plane. The motives for marriage have changed. These women do not need support, for they can secure for themselves a satisfactory income, but they do need companionship and affection. In addition, they frequently become increasingly aware of sexual starvation. Several different ways present themselves for the solution of this problem. When the pressure of sexuality is not too great many a woman solves her emotional problem by a friendship with another woman. Or, she jumps, as it were, over the sexual aspect of her difficulty and arrives directly at the maternal. She adopts a child whom she supports and to whom she is both father and mother. If her sexual problem is more urgent and her emotional needs cannot be satisfied by the love of friend or children, she makes a relationship with a man. As a rule, there are no unmarried men of her own age available, for this problem of late marriage is peculiarly the problem of women. She is therefore left with two alternatives: she can have an extra-marital relation with a married man (a problem which will be considered later) or she can marry a man who is her junior, and, generally also, less mature psychologically.

One of the factors accounting for an older woman's interest in a man much younger than herself, lies in her own emotional immaturity. Such a woman has put all her energies and attention into developing her individual and professional qualities and but little into developing her feminine values. As a rule, she is very unconscious of her own feeling reactions. Except for an all-embracing maternal kindness she is exceedingly undifferentiated on the emo-

tional side of her nature. This is one reason why she is satisfied with an undeveloped man, and also why she is attracted to him, for the type of relation possible with him reflects her own lack of development in relationship.

As a rule, the man of her choice is not only her junior but also her inferior in adaptation to the world. I have known many instances where a competent and successful business or professional woman has married a man much younger than herself and has then partially or entirely supported him — the traditional rôle of the man and woman being reversed.

This social phenomenon, common as it coming to be, is a very strange one. It almost seems that America is moving towards a matriarchal state of society, in which a strong efficient woman marries a rather undeveloped and feminine man who takes a filial relation to her. The woman is everything — mother, provider, organizer — and the man merely an adjunct, however necessary, to the household.

From the psychological point of view the relationship between such a man and such a woman is not at all satisfactory. The marriage is similar to the old conventional Victorian one, but with the rôles reversed, which increases the disadvantages of the arrangement. For in the patriarchal marriage of Victorian days, the woman, childish though she was in many ways, yet remained mistress in her own sphere. She cared for the feminine side of the household and fulfilled her particular function of child-bearer. But in these modern matriarchal marriages, the man is practically a nonentity. He is supported and yet takes no responsibility for the domestic side of the home. In the past, the woman's biological functions filled her life with interest and work and affection in a way that his cannot. So he becomes entirely dependent on her, but dependence is not relationship. No real psychological rela-

tionship is possible between a dominant and a dependent individual.

Unless the man can solve the problem of his masculine adaptation to the world, in his marriage he can be nothing but a son to the dominant mother-wife. Even in the place which has been left to him, he will soon fail to satisfy her emotionally. For when a man is sexually involved with a woman who is psychologically his mother-provider, he is psychologically imprisoned, being held on that infantile level where pleasure and satisfaction represent happiness, and happiness *for him* remains a goal in itself. The sexuality of men is so closely linked with physical needs and satisfactions that a long discipline is always required to gain release on that plane from the dominance of the pleasure principle. In the case we are considering, where the woman to whom the young man goes for his satisfaction stands in the place of a mother, it is hardly to be expected that he will be able to release himself from the compulsion of his need which creates a sort of "cupboard-love."

The woman, in such a case, is compelled to fill the rôle of mother, for an older woman naturally fears that she may not be able to hold the allegiance of a younger man, feeling that if she refuses to give him what he wants, he may go off after younger and more desirable women. So she feels under compulsion to give him, or to appear to give him, all he asks. For rarely is a woman brave enough to lay aside all ulterior motives and react as woman to man, directly from her own feeling. Yet only such a genuine reaction can compel him to sacrifice his *give-it-to-me-because-I-need-it* attitude. Few women, however, caught in such a situation, are brave enough, or sufficiently disinterested, to take such a risk. Even if the mother-wife were sufficiently courageous, she is rarely adequately aware of her own feelings to be able to express them. For a woman who marries a son-

husband is, as a rule, undeveloped in her feminine nature and is unconscious of her reactions, which are, perhaps, undeveloped, childish, and egotistic. She does not know how she feels, but projects her dissatisfactions to the man and complains of "how much he demands" and "how impossible he is" and "how little he gives in return for all she does for him"—all in the tone of the mother who has failed to bring up her child properly and when his behaviour is unsatisfactory lays all the blame on him or on "the Lord" for giving her such unsatisfactory progeny.

So long as her own emotional nature is immature, she will continue to seek her fulfilment by making someone else dependent on her, her own inner childishness being projected, or reflected, in the man to whom she is attracted. If a marriage of this kind is not to be a complete failure, however, she is compelled to work on the difficulties that arise through his immaturity. In releasing him from his dependence on her, she effects at the same time a change in her own childish and dependent emotional nature. She grows inwardly and that side of her psyche, neglected during youth, may now, through her marriage, reach maturity. Thus the typical problem of this form of marriage is met, for her task is to gain a relation to the feminine principle, the principle of Eros, within herself.

Naturally the emotional factors which have been made the basis of this classification of marriage do not appear isolated in real life. On the contrary, the problems peculiar to them usually appear in various combinations. For instance, there is hardly a marriage, certainly not a successful one, where the woman does not feel maternal towards her husband at some time or in some fields; nor is there likely to be a marriage of any duration in the course of which the woman does not have occasion to turn to her husband for help or support in some crisis. The marriage of ado-

lescents will, in the long run, encounter the problems of differentiating the individual needs of the man and the woman; while the marriage of adults will not escape those resulting from psychological identification. But, none the less, in these typical marriage patterns outstanding and typical problems may be discerned, which, however, do not necessarily form an absolute contra-indication to marriage or, indeed, to successful marriage; but each presents a particular type of problem, which if not met, may prove fatal to the partnership.

The more developed the man or woman is, however, the less do these external conditions matter. Conventional standards, representing as they do the generalized wisdom of society, are the rules by which a woman must guide her life until she has something better — something more adapted, more individual — with which to replace them. To one who is only collective in his psychological development, the collective error stands as an inevitable pitfall. If a woman has not become a separate individual, but is still collective in her attitudes and standards, that is, in her psychological development, she is well-advised to keep in her marriage within conventional bounds, for to do that which from the collective standpoint is a mistake, is a mistake for her. While another who has developed within herself those characteristics which enable her to extricate herself from the collective pattern, may overstep the conventionally held restrictions, for individual reasons which seem to her sufficient, and may attempt, in her marriage, even successfully, what would, for the average conventional person, bring failure.

AFTER the turmoil and excitement of the wedding are over and the bride and groom start off on their honeymoon, the first thing that confronts them is the fact that they are alone. Marriage may be an institution; their particular

marriage may be a social event of some importance in their circle; but as far as they themselves are concerned, marriage — *in the living* — reduces itself to a relationship between two human beings. This is an aspect that young people are very apt to overlook in the glamorous days of courtship. They look forward to playtime together, such as they have enjoyed during their engagement, and anticipate, perhaps, to an extent dependent on their previous experience, the fulfilment of passion. But the extent of the intimacy involved in marriage is rarely anticipated. During the courtship, the man, for instance, brings into the relation those interests which he feels will please his beloved and which fit in with her wishes and character, leaving other interests in the dark. He does not necessarily feel that he is deceiving her. These other interests do not arise to be lived with her and he perhaps remains unaware that he is withholding them from her knowledge.

The whole situation is changed, however, after the wedding. From now on the entire time of the husband and wife may have to be accounted for to the other, and their thoughts and opinions on each and every subject may be questioned. The withholding of opinions, which may be disconcerting in the extreme to the other, is no longer a matter of expediency, unconsciously indulged in, but becomes a conscious deception. Thus arises the necessity to choose a course of action which will — little as the young people realize it — largely determine the character of the marriage. The man may decide to keep inconvenient facts to himself and tell his wife only "what it is good for her to know," or he may have the courage and honesty to put all his cards on the table and fight the matter out with her. The wife will also have the same problem to decide. She, also, must either deliberately keep certain things to herself or take what may be a considerable risk and tell him about

them. The first of these alternatives leads, needless to say, to a situation foredoomed to become more and more false as the years go on; it is purchasing present peace at the cost of inevitable and increasing estrangement. The second alternative offers at least a prospect of improved understanding and a growing relatedness. It is true that if the love between the young people has little basis of real relatedness, being based on the illusion of an animus-anima projection, the impact of reality may prove too destructive for the love to hold at all. But usually when two people love each other, they are compelled by their love to come back again and again, and make repeated efforts to understand the nature of the difficulty between them. Each time this occurs the bond is strengthened and, as the years go on, they can strike out for truth with more confidence because of the increasing area of really worked-out understanding which nothing can destroy.

In attempting to work out such a mutual understanding certain problems in connection with the instinctual side of their life together will almost inevitably arise. If the sexual relation between husband and wife is to be right and alive, it is necessary that each make an adjustment to the other on both the physical and the psychological plane. The physical adjustment requires much patience and good will on the part of both. As a rule, the woman is far less conscious of this side of her nature than is the man. She, more often than he, comes to her marriage inexperienced. She submits to the man, in many cases, with the sense that this is something which is expected of her, and is for his satisfaction rather than hers. I have known of instances where the girl has actually been told by her mother, or by some other adviser, that women do not enjoy sexuality, but that she must submit to her husband's desire in the matter and, if she wishes to hold his love, she must pretend to enjoy

his embraces and must appear to respond to them. Such advice leads to a falsification of her sexual feelings which is devastating both to the husband and to herself. He may not realize what the trouble is; why he has such a deep sense of dissatisfaction, or why his unsatisfied desire returns so quickly. Unless something deeper of her own instinctual nature awakens within her, the wife is likely to go on "submitting" with ever-increasing reluctance and a growing inner resistance to her husband, while the man, with a certain dogged attitude based on his idea of "marriage rights," may perhaps persist in his demands, entirely forgetting, if he ever knew, that this legal term was originally spelled "rites" and has in its primary significance nothing to do with "rights." But he also forgets that it is not in the nature of things for him to continue for long to enjoy what gives his wife no pleasure.

Or, perhaps, in such a case where at the beginning of marriage the woman appears frigid, the couple may take her indifference too seriously and consider it as a permanent defect, while in reality it comes from her inexperience which a few months of patience will cure. If from their first unsatisfactory experience, they both jump to the conclusion that she is temperamentally frigid, their expectation of failure may prevent the success of future attempts. For love after all is an art which can only be acquired through long experience; those who practice it sincerely will increase in the range and the depth of their expression, much as an artist's capacity for expression grows. But the art of love cannot be practiced successfully if it is viewed only as a technique—the expression of love must be a genuine expression of an emotion which is actually felt. The man is usually more aware of his *physical* emotion and quicker in his responses than the woman, so that he may get his physical satisfaction before she is fully aroused, but if he



learns through love of her to control his own reactions, he can give her also fuller satisfaction. If the physical side of their love is to grow unhindered, they must talk to each other about it. For only by so doing can they learn about love and about themselves through comparing their experiences and reactions. But this is a very difficult thing to do because love gestures and reactions are so personal and so instinctive that both men and women are exceedingly sensitive on the subject. By attempting to talk about these intimate matters, they are brought face to face with the conventional prejudice within themselves. They may be willing *to do* unconventional things provided they are not compelled to recognize or to acknowledge them. This very common characteristic is especially true in matters of love. Many are hampered in their love making by a prejudice that they hardly know exists. Those who are more conscious may look with critical eyes at what they are doing; then the fear of overstepping the bounds of "normal" sexuality may cast a shadow over the freedom of their love making. Or they may have an *opinion* that love should be made in such and such a way and that all other gestures or actions are wrong. A woman once said to me, "A kiss on the face from husband to wife is all right, but a kiss below the neck is unthinkable." If love is not to be restricted by all sorts of unspoken prohibitions, there must be a willingness on the part of both husband and wife to experiment and a realization that anything which is a real expression of love may be acceptable between two people. There is, however, another and more subtle conventionality which may suck the life out of a love relationship. This is the attitude which makes a convention or a precedent even out of one's own experience, as though each experience of love had to follow the pattern laid down on a previous occasion. Love making is the expression of a living feeling; it cannot be bound but

must be left free, so that the living spirit can find for itself the expression which will alone reveal to the man and the woman what is the nature of their love.

The experience of sexuality is not the same for the man as it is for the woman, either physically or psychologically. The physical differences between them are obvious; the psychological differences are just as great and require a no less delicate adjustment. But these differences are far more subtle. Many people seem completely unaware of them, merely experiencing the irritation and estrangement consequent on their neglect.

Sexual union to the man is the concrete symbol of relationship; it represents the spiritual union of love. To him sexuality presents itself as the obvious means of attaining a real union with his beloved, and also as the one way in which he may hope to subdue that vagrant and illusive spirit which he glimpses in the woman because she carries the values of his anima. The man is convinced that if a misunderstanding, a difference of opinion, or the intrusion of undisciplined ego demands, or selfish attitudes have broken the rapport between himself and his loved one, it will be restored if only he can come to her sexually. He argues that the feeling between them after intercourse has so often been deepened and strengthened in a way that to him seems little short of miraculous. "Ergo," he says, "when the feeling between us is broken or strained, intercourse will put it right."

But the woman, whether she knows it with her head or not, knows deep down within her woman's nature that to have intercourse when the feeling between them is not right violates her, and in consenting to it she consents to an assault upon herself. For her it is absolutely essential that the feeling difficulty be cleared up first, that the domination and selfishness be laid aside. She may be willing to leave

the practical points of the dispute unsettled till later, if good feeling and a sense of understanding and acceptance each of the other is re-established, for then she can without violation of her own nature receive her husband's physical love and respond to it.

These matters cannot, of course, be adjusted in a few weeks or months, they require years of close intimacy and painstaking work. Through working on such problems the man and woman may gradually become more conscious of their own natures and in this way build up a solid structure of relatedness each to the other. But a very disturbing factor which will interrupt this growth and development, although it brings also its own peculiar values to their relationship, is likely before long to make its appearance. The woman becomes pregnant. To her this is a deeply significant experience for it affects her in every phase of her being. A new instinct, the instinct of maternity possesses her.

The reproductive instinct in woman is only partly sexual; another part, for some women perhaps the major part, is maternal, but only a relatively small part of a man's reproductive instinct is paternal. Thus when a husband learns that his wife is pregnant, he realizes that it is a fact of great importance to him, but it is a fact, as it were, outside himself, the significance of which he senses chiefly through its effect on her. At this stage, while the woman is going through an experience which affects her vitally in her own person, he participates only in imagination and through sympathy. During this period and the subsequent ones of the child's infancy, when her instinct is directed almost entirely in the maternal stream, his instinct continues primarily sexual in its needs and manifestation. Her absorption in the maternal process leaves him with unsatisfied, or "loose," libido, for she is not available to him emotionally in the same way as she was before. The difficulty in adjustment which re-

sults is accentuated by the fact that the paternal instinct in most men is hardly aroused at all before the birth of the child, while the maternal instinct takes possession of most women from the very beginning of pregnancy.

This difference in the instinct of husband and wife frequently gives rise to serious problems between them, especially in those cases where the sexual interest of the woman is far overbalanced by the maternal. In such cases not only is she occupied during pregnancy with those mysterious changes which are going on within her, but after the birth of the child, she is likely to put its interests always before her husband's and to allow her maternal solicitude for her baby to deprive him of her time and attention.

Sometimes a woman whose sexuality has remained childish and undeveloped, who therefore finds little pleasure or satisfaction in her sexual relation to her husband, takes refuge in maternity, almost it seems, with unconscious deliberation, with the, perhaps unrecognized, intention of preventing her husband from making any further sexual demands upon her. Is it any wonder if the husband, whose instinct is not occupied with the children, begins to look for consolation elsewhere? The wife, however, does not realize what part her neglect of him has played in the situation. She ignores her own fault and blames him for his defection. Instead of taking the first sign that he is becoming interested in other women as a danger signal indicating that she is letting the value of her marriage slip through her fingers, she tries to hold him by all sorts of tricks or by appeals to his loyalty. This reaction is perfectly instinctive — a self-protective mechanism — but it is more than that, for society has decreed that it is a woman's business to "hold her husband." Thus another conventional *of course* enters into the picture. It is at this point, indeed, that many women become both demanding and possessive. A woman will seek, for instance,

to prevent her husband from going anywhere alone. If she must stay at home in the evening to care for the babies, he must stay at home too; if he but speaks to another woman, she becomes jealous and fault-finding. She will do all in her power to hold him — except the one thing which might be efficacious: to revive the reality of their relationship which is fast suffocating under the dust of habit.

The following incident illustrates what may happen when the woman is courageous enough to put reality in the place of artifice. Boredom between a certain man and his wife had become so unendurable that they felt divorce was the only possible cure for the impasse they faced. It was suggested that, as a last expedient, they try the effect of expressing their real reactions. This involved breaking the habit of years, for they had consistently repressed their feelings, "taking it out," as the saying is, in an inner bitterness against each other. The plan worked like a charm. On the very first occasion when the woman brought out her negative reaction to some unconsciously selfish act on the part of her husband, he sat up and looked at her with a new attention, saying, "Why, you're interesting when you talk like that!" His words threw fresh light for her on the whole situation. She realized in a flash how mistaken the old way had been, how mistaken the fear that she would lose his affection if she should express her real feelings.

It is by no means uncommon to find that the woman has built up a conscious system or technique for holding the man's interest and love, and we cannot altogether blame her for this, however insincere her method. For in the event of the failure of her marriage, she bears most of the blame. In England, this is true to a far greater extent than in America, where divorce is so common. But even in America society is still swayed by something of the old *feeling*, although many people no longer hold strictly to the old *opinions*.

Consequently, married women tend to be too much orientated to their husbands' interest, and reactions. One woman, for instance, is concerned almost exclusively with the effect her actions and words will have on her husband, with the result that she consciously tries to "manage" him. Another, in revolt against this exclusive concern, puts all her ardour into rebellion. But, whichever form her concern takes, it results in a too complete absorption in the man and his reactions. As a consequence, too much of the woman's attention is withdrawn from her own task of finding herself, of discovering the inner centre of her own being and her own path in life.

This diversion of the wife's attention is almost inevitable, for from the point of view of society, she *must* make a success of her marriage. Conventionally, she must always appear to be on good terms with her husband, regardless of any private difficulties and must always be available to their social circle. In addition to the personal and instinctual concerns, her relationship to her husband has to carry all the social and comradely interests. For marriage is not only an institution, not only an intimate personal relationship; it is also quite literally a social function. The family is the unit of society; its days are filled with duties and amusements *on the everyday plane*—these are the staples of life. To make a success of marriage in this sense demands from each a certain easy-going tolerance, and a certain amount of affection and understanding. But this type of "successful marriage" never touches the deeper levels of the psyche, where dwell the dark, the unknown, the passionate instincts and emotions. Indeed, the very necessity of maintaining an easy work-a-day comradeship demands that the dark and unknown and violent forces in the depths be kept well in check. It is, therefore, unusual for the polarization between husband and wife to become very great. For many people

— and they are doubtless of the most normal and perhaps the happiest type — such an experience of life and love suffices; in the affection and companionship of the home situation, they find all that they need. But there are others who are impelled by something intense in their own natures to seek for greater heights and depths of emotional experience. I have spoken above of how the woman's absorption in her children may leave her husband unsatisfied. In such a case certain men may be driven by their own intensity and by an inner need to experience themselves more deeply, to seek with some other woman what they have failed to find in their marriage.

A situation of this kind raises a very difficult emotional problem for the wife. She feels, not unnaturally, that her whole position is jeopardized. She believes that if her husband is interested in another woman he can no longer love her. If the other woman is of an obviously inferior type, one with whom the wife realizes he can have only a very limited affair, she is likely to be less alarmed than she would be if a woman of a superior type had attracted him. In the former case the wife feels the affair to be disgusting enough and humiliating for her, quite apart from the very real and deep suffering she endures, but, if it does not obtrude itself on her attention, that is, if she does not have to recognize it, she can let it take its course in the hope that, ignored, it will soon pass over. But in the latter case, if the husband is attracted to a woman of parts — his equal in culture, in character and in moral development — then the wife is likely to be much more alarmed. She fears, and rightly, that a relationship with such a woman is likely to be more enduring than an affair with one of light morals and no culture; yet the marriage is in certain ways more endangered by the man's involvement in light affairs than by an extra-marital relationship, at once more serious and more seriously under-

taken. For the man's development along Eros lines — that is, on the side of his nature through which he is related to women — depends on the *character* of his relationships; the things he learns outside of marriage will inevitably react on his attitude to his wife. If he has an inferior type of relationship with an inferior type of woman, he will assuredly expect to manage his affairs with his wife after the pattern learned from his mistress. If his mistress is a woman who can be picked up and put down at will, one with whom he has never to work out any difficulty, one whose hurts are cured by gifts, one with whom he has never to measure up to any standard of responsibility, and one towards whom he can act always according to his own pleasure and convenience, then the lessons learned with this "light-of-love" will be practiced in his associations with his wife. For as the *Yi King* says in speaking of the "bold maiden" who comes to meet the man: "The common appears so harmless and smiling, that the man takes delight in it. It appears so little and weak that he expects to be able to play with it irresponsibly." \* But no man has much experience with such women without learning to his cost that they exact a heavy price for their favours, and in a quarter perhaps, where it is most unexpected; he finds that they are, invariably, at least as self-seeking as he and that their resources for getting what they want are inexhaustible. These lessons, too, he will take back home with him. He will expect his wife to act when crossed as his mistress acts and he will arm himself in advance against the demands he fully expects her to make. She will naturally enough be incensed at the low opinion he holds of her. But she would hardly be human if she did not sooner or later justify him in it, and come to say, "Well if he thinks that sort of thing of me, I will just show him what it is like."

\* *Yi King*, translated into German by Prof. R. Wilhelm.



Occasionally it happens, however, that a man has an extra-marital affair with a woman of a different type, one who is his equal in culture, morals, and social standing. In this case perhaps the new relationship relieves the home situation of a good deal of tension. In certain instances the man's extra-marital relation seems to be the counterpart of the wife's absorption in her children. She, through her maternal experience, may learn much that is of value in her relation to her husband, and he, through his love for another woman, may likewise learn much that is of value in his relation to his wife. For in his relation to a woman to whom he is not married, he is obliged to submit to the laws of feeling-relationship; he has no contract with her, he has to make good all along the line — not in his own judgement but from the woman's point of view — or he finds himself dismissed. If her feelings are not of the kind to be soothed by a gift, he is compelled to meet her on her own ground and to accept a measure of responsibility for psychological relationship — a responsibility which his wife may have been quite unable to elicit from him.

The absence of the social obligations of marriage and the absence of the bond which children make between husband and wife, serve to concentrate the attention of lover and mistress on the varying shades of their feeling for each other in every situation as it arises. The lover and mistress are entirely separate entities; they are not identified. A certain collective obligation, however, always exists between husband and wife which prevents a similar concentration of attention and, indeed, fosters unconsciousness of the actual feeling situation between them. They form a unit; and must always present a united front to society. They move in the same social circle. No matter how serious the problem just arisen between them, they must appear among their friends as a harmonious pair. Their home must have a

certain unification of aim. Their children necessitate a further simplification and unification of their relation to each other. The routine of their lives leaves little opportunity for attending with sufficient concentration to the emotional side of their relationship. The intensity of love or the urgency of disagreement, each requires time if it is to be assimilated. Many married people find it easier to repress both under the mask which they habitually wear before the family. Thus a certain unreality creeps in and their association tends towards an easy-going unconsciousness. This kind of relationship has, however, many values. It makes up, as it were, real life, while a relationship outside of marriage is rather in the nature of a school where much can be learned which may subsequently be applied to marriage.

In these days of easy marriage and easy divorce, there is a great tendency to take the whole subject of matrimony very lightly. The modern attitude is: since divorce is so easy, why should marriage be taken seriously? A woman in her early thirties who had made a terrible mistake in her marriage once actually said to me: "Well, why *should* one take marriage so seriously?" This is an attitude almost inconceivable to one who realizes the significance of marriage. For its very essence implies permanence. The man and woman who marry declare their intention to take this one relationship out of all other possible relationships, in order to work on it and make it permanent — life long. It is the most far-reaching of relationships. If a woman marries without taking its obligations seriously, it follows that she does not take any relationship seriously. Only through relationship, however, can her psychological boundaries be defined; only thus can she find herself. If she does not take her marriage seriously, she does not take herself seriously at all. Such an attitude is the beginning of the disintegration of society.

It may, however, be urged that no one can undertake to promise that his affections will persist unimpaired for a life time; that it is impossible to pledge the permanence of one's feelings through even one year. This is true and it is also true that to modern consciousness it is more moral to break a contract, one of whose most essential features, love, can no longer be fulfilled, rather than to go on indefinitely substituting duty for love. But the fact remains that if a woman marries without the heartfelt intention of permanence, if she allows a certain mental reservation to creep in — "If it is not satisfactory there is always divorce!" — she is not likely to make a success of her marriage. No determined adventurer about to embark upon a hazardous enterprise holds any commerce with a voice which whispers, "If all does not go well, I can always turn back." Mental reservations like this do not lead to success.

So, if a woman undertakes the adventure of marriage with a backdoor of escape — easy divorce — left open, the adventure is all but doomed at the outset. The difficulties and dangers of any close relationship demand the mobilization of all our forces. It is a well-known psychological fact that if the attitude be secretly taken that "we can always turn back," it is impossible to mobilize all of our forces. Only after a woman has made every effort to solve her difficulties, has left not a stone unturned, and still her marriage has failed, only then should she turn, perhaps, to divorce. Judging from my own knowledge of many marriages, I believe that many divorces have really been unnecessary, that they have *solved* no psychological problem of the marriage.

If, however, a woman must seek this way of escape from an intolerable marriage, she ought to bring to it the same seriousness of purpose and the same close consideration of all the factors concerned which should have been given originally to the question of marriage. There are many

things a wife would do well to take into account before she turns to divorce as the remedy for her troubles. For the clock cannot be put back. Even if she has no children — and unquestionably if she has — she must carry with her throughout life the imprint of this relationship. If her marriage is cut short, leaving, unsolved, problems in which her libido is still bound up she will continue to bear the burden of an unfinished relationship, which will crop up to be dealt with at every point in her life whenever she comes close to a man. It will become a kind of ghost which she can exorcise only through working out that problem which her release from her first husband left unsolved.

Marriage *must* be taken seriously. It is as though to become wife to any man means, in a certain psychological sense, to become his other half. It means to take upon one's self something of responsibility for his anima. The attraction leading to marriage is an indication that the man has projected his anima to this particular woman, while some quality or complex of qualities in her really reflects this aspect of his psyche. The woman, therefore, in working on her relation to her husband, is also working on that part of herself which reflected his anima. If she cannot make a satisfactory adjustment with him, she must seriously ask herself whether it may not be that at least part of the fault lies in her where there lurks, perhaps, something which really resembles those qualities she so much resents in him. Certainly it is not until she has dealt with her own possessiveness, her own selfishness, her own unconsciousness, that she is able to help him with his problem. For his faults towards her lie in that realm of his psyche furthest from his conscious concerns, namely, on the side of Eros or psychological relationship, which should be mediated by feeling; if the woman does not help him here, it is well-nigh impossible for him to become conscious.

If, then, a woman runs away from one marriage because of the man's lack of Eros development, she is likely, in a second marriage, to find herself involved with a man who is no more satisfactory. In other words, not until the woman has done everything possible towards making herself conscious in the relationship to her husband and has left no stone unturned to work out something of reality between them, unblurred by assumptions, illusions, and projections, is she justified in violently breaking her association with him. For the relation between husband and wife is a unique relation. It carries with it the possibility of development on more planes, perhaps, than any other which life offers. Once undertaken, if its values are to be garnered, it must be carried through to the furthest possible limit, even though compromises may be necessary and cherished illusions and assumptions must be discarded. For the woman who can do this there is a great reward, both in terms of her own personal development and growth and in terms of an established relationship which none of the hazards of life can overthrow.

---

## CHAPTER VI

### MATERNITY

THE RELATION of mother and child is so simple that every peasant woman takes it for granted; so full of emotional content that artists, poets and story-tellers have been lured by it in every age; so complicated that psychologists are kept busy tracing out its subtle currents and enduring effects. The exploration of the fundamental relation of a child to his mother has led to a widespread consciousness of the factors which go into the building up of an adult's character and which influence his motives and actions, sometimes consciously, but far more often in a way and to a degree of which he is profoundly unconscious. The conclusions first drawn by psychologists, who based their theories on observations of the unconscious, have now become facts of such common knowledge that modern plays and novels not only take them into account but often base the entire plot on problems arising out of the relation existing between a mother and her child. I say "modern plays." I might have saved myself the use of the adjective, for not a few classical plays deal likewise with the same fundamental subject. To give type-examples of plots concerned chiefly with this relation, I have but to mention, of classical stories, *Œdipus Rex*, *Elektra*, *Hamlet* and *Ruth*, and, of modern plays and novels, *The Silver Cord*, *Sons and Lovers*, and *Mourning Becomes Electra*. But — and here is a strange phenomenon — these type-examples reflect, for the most part, the situation from the point of view of the child. It

is not easy to find a novel or play which treats the relation from the point of view of the mother. And—a stranger phenomenon still—our textbooks of psychology are concerned chiefly with the complexes and conflicts in the child and deal with these to the almost complete exclusion of the mother's side of the problem. Women are not unaware to-day that this discussion is so largely a one-sided affair and they are puzzled by it. "It is hard to be a mother in these days," a woman once said to me. "If you are a 'bad' mother your child naturally reproaches you and lays all the blame for his difficulties on your inexperienced treatment of him. But if you are a 'good' mother you will not escape blame and reproach. For now it is said that by your very kindness and skillful handling you have bound him to you in an unescapable fixation."

This is, indeed, the Scylla and Charybdis of the mother's problem, for if she is "all-mother," devoting herself to her children's needs when they are young and identifying herself to their interests as they grow older, she will find that they remain bound to her and to their own childishness. She has been a "good mother" and the result has proved to be "bad." Or, if she is a "bad mother" giving the children no special consideration, but continuing her own life with as little interruption as possible, she may still find that they cling to her apron strings, or perhaps "fling off" in an infantile search for freedom of a kind which does not exist. It almost seems that there is no way of avoiding these conflicting difficulties. The rôle of mother appears to be doomed in advance. Those who apotheosize the "Mother" as well as those who revile her, predict for her task nothing but failure.

The question arises then, how can a woman deal with this dilemma? Is the peculiar relation between a mother and her child to be considered only a liability? Is there not some

way by which the dangers and difficulties of this fundamental relation of child to mother can be adequately met ? Since we are dealing here with the problems of women, the subject will naturally be approached from the mother's point of view. After all, this is the primary aspect, for the relation of the mother to her child begins long before consciousness dawns for the infant, and the main lines of the relationship are already firmly established before the child, himself, has much power to influence them. The woman's relation to her offspring and to herself *as mother* are the predetermining factors whose influence on subsequent events cannot be overestimated.

In considering the mother's problem, however, we must not for one instant lose sight of the child's own personal standpoint, for any real solution *must* take into full account both child and mother. The relationship between them is so deep and so fundamental that we should surely begin on an *a priori* belief that their interests cannot be inherently opposed, and this in spite of the fact that if we listen to certain psychologists and novelists, we might well conclude that the interests of mother and child *are* fundamentally opposed — many people seem to think that it is necessarily a case of the mother exploiting the child or of the child flouting and overcoming the mother. But surely these are not the only alternatives. Each generation, it is true, must be superseded by the next; but in this historic fulfilment are we to conceive of life as casting aside and trampling on the individual generation as it passes — much as certain primitives erect a "suicide pole" for the aged or bury them alive when they are no longer of use to the tribe ? We are too much individualists today to give our allegiance to such a non-individualistic creed. The solution of all the problems with which this book deals points away from the kind of psychological inter-dependence which makes the freedom of one a



necessary sacrifice for the happiness of another, and is directed instead towards a value which is above personal satisfactions and egotistic ambitions. In the recognition that the true fulfilment of each individual is not to be found through the satisfaction of his personal desires alone, but also through an allegiance to the aims of another part of his psyche which is in harmony with the movement of life through the generations, lies a possible solution of the problem. If the divergent aims of mother and child are to be met in such a way as to satisfy the essential individuality of both, each must recognize this supra-personal law which transcends personal impulses and wishes and which yet does not over-ride or disregard the right of each to psychological development and fulfilment in this life.

The experience of motherhood begins with pregnancy. When a woman first realizes that she is carrying new life within her womb, her joy and sense of fulfilment may be mingled with wonder, but the pregnancy itself seems quite natural to her. When the man learns of the situation, however, it seems to him an almost unbelievable miracle — a fabulous thing which he cannot grasp. But to the *woman* pregnancy and giving birth to children is an integral part of her nature. If she is at all in touch with the “earth woman” within herself, she takes it, after the first amazement that this thing should have come to *her*, very much as a matter of course. It is as though something within her said, “This is the way it is to be a woman.”

Women vary greatly, however, in their way of reacting to pregnancy. For the primitive, or naïve, woman the whole process may be completed almost entirely on an instinctive level. Such women want babies and feel at their best, both physically and psychologically, when carrying a child. They are *physically* maternal, and their love goes out quite simply and naturally to their children.

Until recently it has been assumed with a kind of blind sentimentality that this is the one normal type of woman; that *of course* any true woman must rejoice at the prospect of becoming a mother. Certain feelings are expected of her and she herself may feel guilty at their absence. Yet the actual experience of maternity is not always so easy and free from conflict as this expectation would suggest. For civilization brings with it a development of the individual ego with its sense of *personal* importance. A woman who is aware of her own ego will not react to pregnancy in a purely instinctive fashion. The recognition of the fact may come as a shock, or as an unexpected experience which has to be met by a conscious attitude. It may be that her emotional response is one of joy and acceptance; or, again, she may regard it as a terrible nuisance, interfering with her life's pattern and plans in a way she had not counted on.

Her objections may rest on purely selfish grounds; she wants to be able to enjoy herself; she resents losing her figure and youthful energy; she may anticipate with terror the suffering entailed; and she may look forward to the time of caring for the baby, with its disturbed nights and fully occupied days, with resistance and distaste. Emotionally such a young woman is still a child; her whole orientation to life is in pleasure seeking. Such a woman will find within herself neither strength nor courage to meet the ordeal of maternity, for it has to be met *alone*!

Another woman may wish to avoid pregnancy for more serious reasons. She may have a less selfish outlook and yet dislike intensely the interruption to her life which motherhood involves. The whole scheme of life of not a few modern young people is seriously interfered with by the woman's pregnancy. Where, for instance, the couple married counting on the woman's earnings to make their joint income sufficient for their needs, the realization that the wife is preg-

nant brings an urgent and severe psychological problem. For the husband this may be serious enough. But for him it is, after all, one belonging to the outer world — a problem chiefly in ways and means. For the woman, however, it is a living crisis within her which causes a violent conflict or split in her own nature. It may seem as though her body had turned traitor to her. She does not want pregnancy for reasons which seem to her most important; but deep within her something rejoices that once again a human being is about to fulfil the ancient commandment, "Be fruitful and multiply."

Occasionally the woman's resistance to pregnancy turns into resentment against her husband. She may feel as if he had betrayed her, had forced this experience upon her against her will. I remember one woman who harboured for years, from the date of her first pregnancy, the most intense resistance against her husband, feeling that her sufferings were his fault. Consequently, she resented his approach and became almost entirely frigid towards him. Fortunately, however, the majority of women are able to accept the problem of maternity as a part of their own nature and so avoid this impasse.

When a woman resents her pregnancy she is very apt to suffer from various disorders — as vomiting or a threatened miscarriage — which are, at least in part, the result of her psychological attitude. If she can be made aware of the nature of her resistances and can recognize that her pregnancy is the fulfilment of her own fate, belonging to *her* and not forced upon her, the symptoms usually clear up and do not return.

The woman who has a developed ego sense does not necessarily resent pregnancy. In the majority of cases she treats it as *of course*, "all in the day's work." At first she is concerned chiefly in concealing the fact from observation; later

she becomes involved in the preparations it entails and in anticipations of the baby and in loving plans for its future. A woman who is in this way preoccupied with the external aspect of her experience may yet remain completely unconscious of the *significance* of the event which is taking place within her. I have known women, mothers of several children, who have never become aware in any profound sense of what was taking place, who never realized in the least degree that an act of creation was being performed through them. Something more is needed beyond fulfilling the biological instinct and adapting to the needs of the child, if a woman is to experience *in herself* the significance of maternity, if she is to be conscious of herself as woman and as mother.

In the past, as was said above, it was assumed that *of course* every woman wanted a child, but today young married couples often frankly admit that they do not want or cannot afford babies. If conception takes place in spite of their intention to avoid pregnancy, they may take matters into their own hands and interfere with its continuance. This course of action is undertaken quite lightly in many instances, as though it were of little consequence. The voice of Nature and any understanding of the significance of the act are alike blotted out by the rational and materialistic attitude which they take towards life.

Abortion and infanticide, so abhorrent to the Christian standpoint, have not always been condemned. They are freely practiced among primitive tribes and were by no means uncommon in ancient civilizations, as, for instance, in China. Abortion was extremely common also in Europe up to the Middle Ages and has recently been revived as a State service in Soviet Russia. But amongst civilized peoples of more recent times there has been a deep-seated sense that such an action is wrong. This sense of the wrongness of abortion

is generally explained in terms of the taking of life — as a sort of murder. When the induction of abortion destroys an embryo sufficiently developed to be viable, the act approximates infanticide and the majority of people so regard it. But opinions vary greatly about the destruction of a less developed embryo. Yet any fertilized ovum is a potential new life and a strictly logical attitude would draw no distinction between the youngest embryo and a fully formed child. Some people even carry the desire for protecting life to the extreme point of condemning the use of contraceptives on the ground that, if it is evil to destroy an ovum after fertilization, it must also be wrong to prevent its meeting with the sperm cell.

The common-sense attitude of today rejects these arguments against contraception as absurd on the ground that there is an acknowledged necessity to bring into the world only those children who can be adequately cared for and equipped for modern life and its hazards. Thus the attempt to solve the problem from the angle of conventional morality inevitably leads to a *reductio ad absurdum*. Is there to be found in a study of the psychological reaction of individuals to contraceptives, on the one hand, and to abortion on the other, a deeper, more fundamental, more individual morality which can be taken as a guide to action in this most difficult realm of life ?

Modern people usually hold that pregnancy should be voluntary, a task undertaken consciously at the most favourable time, an attitude which certainly seems to have common sense as its basis. But this plan does not always work out, for unintentional conception occasionally occurs. If this possibility has not been taken into account, the young couple may find themselves in a serious dilemma. Under such circumstances they sometimes argue that it is far better not to allow the pregnancy to go on as they cannot afford the present

expense, much less provide adequately for a child. To terminate it seems to be the easy way out of their difficulty, a superficial view which is nevertheless often taken. That this course of action involves a certain amount of pain and risk and a good deal of expense they recognize. They are less likely to consider seriously that it is an offence punishable by law; its psychological effects are the last they take into account. For they seem to think that when the pregnancy is terminated all will be as before. They do not realize that the clock cannot be put back, that a situation which has come into being can never be recalled.

An instance, one of many which have come to my attention, will serve to illustrate this point. A woman in the middle thirties came to consult me because she felt herself to be at the breaking point. She did not know why. In reviewing her history she told me that at the age of sixteen she had "got into trouble" with a man whom she met casually while traveling. She had concealed her condition from her parents for some time and when they discovered it, they were overwhelmed. The man was quite unknown to them and the girl knew nothing of his whereabouts at the time. Realizing that the family's good name would be smirched by the appearance of an illegitimate child, fearing that their daughter's life would be ruined, and feeling, too, the terrible responsibility of bringing an unwanted child into the world, the parents took nothing more into account, but went with their daughter to a distant city and had the pregnancy terminated. This happened some ten or fifteen years before this woman consulted me and she was not aware that her present difficulties were in any way connected with this, as she would say, "little trouble," of so many years back, which had none the less done violence to her inmost nature and had alienated her from her own deepest womanhood.

She had been caught in an almost insoluble dilemma. She

followed the advice of her parents who judged it better to do as they did rather than to permit an innocent child, whose very existence would embarrass and compromise the mother, to be brought into the world. She took the easiest and quickest way out of the difficulty and tried, only too successfully, to blind herself to the real significance of her action. She did not realize that she was interfering with a process which goes far deeper than the conscious wish. As a modern woman she could not bear young, unthinking, like an animal. She was not able to support a child and felt it would not be fair to involve one in her own difficulties. But here her consciousness of the situation ended. She was not aware that something deep within her had stirred — that the maternal instinct had begun to take possession of her. This, however, was exactly the case. When she began to search for the cause of her subsequent break-down she found just below consciousness an accumulation of repressed and unrealized emotion bound up with her dead baby. At the time, however, she had passed over the whole experience with a sigh of relief that she had freed herself from the fate which threatened to overwhelm her. But ten years later she was compelled to weep for the infant who, in her necessity, she had repudiated without a tear.

There is no royal road out ! In a case such as this, where a young girl becomes involved in a situation whose significance she does not realize and where, no matter what she does, wrong is involved, to let nature take its course and bear the child does not solve the problem. On the one hand, such a child should never have been conceived and it cannot be right to compel an innocent child to bear the burden of its mother's fault. On the other hand, to terminate the pregnancy is an act directly in opposition not only to the law of the land but also to a law of nature. To act in haste does not put matters right, nor make the situation as though

the pregnancy had never been. For a girl who has been through such an ordeal is inevitably cut off psychologically from friends of her own age and to pretend that she is the same as she was before it happened is the merest hypocrisy. If an experience of this character is repressed, unrealized, it acts as a centre of irritation in the unconscious which may later threaten the girl's whole adaptation to life.

How such a situation should be met is naturally a very difficult question. This girl found herself trapped. The course she took seemed to be forced upon her by fate. Her premature plunge into the realities of life had precipitated a problem too big for her to handle. By taking the road her parents suggested, she evaded the moral conflict involved in her predicament and so remained unconscious. If, instead of searching wildly for a way out, she had made an attempt to grapple deliberately with the evil in the situation, she might, through facing the conflict, have come to a greater degree of consciousness and, through this, instead of being pushed by fate into something whose significance she did not realize, she would have been able to make a voluntary decision as to her course of action.

When the choice is made with full consciousness of what it involves the outcome will not be *all* evil. For it is through just such moral conflicts courageously borne that psychological growth is brought about. This problem forms the theme of Hawthorne's *Scarlet Letter* and William de Morgan's *Somehow Good*. In each case the heroine bore an illegitimate child and through accepting the burden and responsibility entailed, developed and matured in a way which would hardly have been possible if her life had followed a more usual course. The same result may be achieved by a woman who decides to take the other road, if she chooses it not to escape from the consequences of her own folly but rather with a conscious determination to bear the whole bur-



den herself and not involve a child in her dilemma. If this is her motive she will not incur irrevocable moral or psychological injury but, instead, may gain development of character through the suffering she consciously assumes.

This incident of a successfully terminated pregnancy furnishes a most striking example of the importance of the inner aspect of the experience. Inasmuch as there were no external results, it might be supposed that nothing of importance could be happening within. Yet, even where the external situation has been passed over merely as a disagreeable necessity, much like an illness, its inner effects do not so pass. Any other minor operation is an experience which can be accepted at its face value, and, after the pain, anxiety, and convalescence are over, it falls into the background, leaving no long train of inner consequences. But an interference with pregnancy does not act in this way, for pregnancy involves more than physical changes. The bearing of children is a biological task. The roots of the maternal instinct reach back into the deepest layers of a woman's nature, touching forces of which she may be profoundly unconscious. When a woman becomes pregnant these ancient powers stir within her, whether she knows it or not, and she disregards them only at her peril.

The stirring of the maternal instinct is clearly shown in the following story. It is the more remarkable because the woman herself had no idea that she was pregnant and, indeed, since her marriage had taken every precaution to prevent pregnancy as she wished to continue in her profession. One night, however, she dreamed a most significant dream, which was repeated three times, indicating its great importance. The dream is quoted here in her own words.

"There was a delightful big mother elephant. She seemed so big and warm by contrast, because she was leading a tiny youthful figure, a girl, who was trying her best to follow and keep up

with her. Occasionally because of fatigue or things of interest along the road she would stop. Then the big friendly elephant would stop, just long enough to turn her head around and smile (the way elephants can only do in dreams) and motion not to be discouraged, to come on, and not give up. Then again the figure would hop up and follow gaily after. It was a pleasant trip the two journeyed together. The elephant so wise, the figure so young and happy. When the figure started again on the road after hesitating, I awoke, finding myself cold and shivering and to my great surprise I was out of bed walking across the room as though I were myself that little figure who was being called to follow the elephant across the continent. This happened twice. The third time I dreamed it they reached their journey's end. The two arrived at the Golden Gate of California and then the elephant sat on a tiny island directly in front of the setting sun. The little figure just watched, waiting, directly in front of her. The sun sank rapidly. This was the end of my dream. Through my work with the analyst we dug out all the associations that elephants have for me, in particular their religious significance in India. Then the question arose: What did they mean to me? What was this quest or journey on which the mother elephant would take me? What was my attitude going to be?"

The little figure in the dream was undoubtedly a part of the dreamer. This "part" had to follow the elephant and take up the burden of the journey. She could do so only after much hesitation and, indeed, she needed a good deal of encouragement. So urgent was this call from the unconscious depths of her being that she actually got out of bed in her sleep to follow (the dreamer is not usually a sleep-walker). Not until she had been asked, "What is this quest to which the elephant is calling you?" did the dreamer begin to suspect that she might be pregnant, which, indeed, proved to be the case. Then the meaning of the dream at once began to be clear. The great mother elephant had come to lead her to the experience of maternity. She must lay

down the professional work she had proposed for herself, follow the mother elephant to the edge of the continent, and, through the experience of pain and danger which awaited her, descend with the sun and with the sun arise again in the East, to a new phase of life.

This exceedingly significant dream had a profound effect on the dreamer. Up to the time when she dreamed it she had been a child playing at life (her attitude is shown in the little figure, who stops to see everything of interest on the road) but pregnancy is already upon her, all unknown to herself. Life is calling to her to undertake a responsible task, perhaps the most responsible anyone can undertake — to bring another living being into the world. The Mother from deep within her calls to her to cease being a child and to take up her task.

As soon as a woman reaches a stage of consciousness which permits her to realize the experience of maternity as a task, something which transcends personal likes and dislikes enters the picture and the woman is thereby freed to realize herself consciously through her function of mother.

It may be well to pause for a moment to ask what the significance of maternity is when viewed as a *task*. On the biological plane the reproduction of the species is a function common to all living things. Together with the task of obtaining food and shelter, it uses practically the entire energy of all species below the human level, and, for a large part of the human race, these two occupations absorb most of the individual's available energy. With the increase in control of the physical world, however, the task of reproduction has become less and less formidable. In order to keep the population adequately supplied with recruits, not so many women need to have children and no woman needs to have many children.

The social significance of child-bearing has thus been considerably restricted. Nevertheless, to the woman herself, the bearing of a child has, apart from the fulfilment of her biological instincts, other, no less important, significances. The child is, in a sense, a completion both of herself and of her husband. Immortality of a certain kind is attained in the child. He perpetuates, as it were, the life of his parents, of which he is a living embodiment. For this reason to found a family is for many people of great importance. On another plane — a more subjective one — the mother herself is reproduced through the *experience* of maternity, and so gains a symbolic immortality. For the physical child to whom she gives birth may be to her the symbol of a new self, re-created through the act by which she has fulfilled her own nature. So, in the dream quoted above, the going down of the sun for its *night journey* under the sea may result in the birth of an inner child, a new Sun Hero, who arises in the East. On this plane of interpretation, the dream is then this woman's individual version of the myth of the birth of the Hero, that is, it foreshadows the rebirth of the woman herself, re-created through the experience of pregnancy and parturition.

Many women sense dimly that in the experience of childbirth more happens than they are entirely conscious of. They know intuitively that the significance of child-bearing is deeper than the production of the actual physical child. The infant means to them far more than they can explain. There enters into their love of the child an emotion which belongs to deeper and more subjective significances, for the child represents the promise of the renewal of life — of immortality and of re-creation. The physical child is to his mother another self, a non-personal, an "object" self. The spiritual child born of the experience of maternity is in the

same way not the mother's personal ego, reborn, but is non-personal, a new centre of the psyche, which Jung has called Self.

WHEN a woman becomes pregnant her attention, both biological and emotional, is claimed for the new and vital creative process taking place within her. She withdraws into herself. Life demands that she surrender her own body, almost her own entity, to the child. She can no longer give herself completely to the life with her husband. He feels this withdrawal of her interest and may resent it. After his first efforts to draw her back into their mutual concerns have met with scant success, he in turn may withdraw. Or, if he is a more understanding person, he may realize the claims of the child and also put his energy and interest into the creative enterprise which is the fruit of their marriage, although the child cannot mean as much to him as to the mother in this intra-uterine stage of its existence.

It is difficult moreover for him to distinguish between the personal or egotistic demands of his wife and the legitimate demands of her pregnancy. Indeed, there is a grave risk that the woman herself may fail to make this differentiation. She may magnify her disabilities, perhaps unconsciously, to gain attention from her husband, claiming care and solicitude for *herself*, instead of for *herself as mother* — the priestess of life; or she may underestimate them in a determination not to be selfish.

The false attitude which arises from self-pity or from fear of losing her husband's love during the time when she cannot be *all* wife to him is peculiarly baffling to the man, for it is very difficult for him to estimate justly the pains and restrictions a pregnant woman suffers. Some men, being unable to imagine an ordeal which by the nature of the case

can never touch themselves, discount these disabilities completely. Others, perhaps the majority, overestimate the sufferings of motherhood, not realizing that this is woman's share of the discipline of life which is as necessary for her spiritual well-being as work is for a man's.

If the woman is not chiefly concerned during this process with the discomforts and limitations pregnancy imposes but is willing to allow life to be lived through her, she may experience an entirely new phase of consciousness for she becomes complete in herself, independent of man. She is *all* mother and offspring. She attains, biologically and psychologically, to the completeness of the Virgin Mother goddess. She regains something of the separateness of virginity. The pregnant woman has been worshipped from antiquity as representing something "in herself," something individual. This aspect of individuality is attained through completely fulfilling a collective rôle, for a pregnant woman is no longer what she has been — the embodiment of the personal — she is "One of the Mothers."

When maternity is accepted in this spirit, the woman experiences something of her own *individual* separateness. Her pregnancy becomes to her a profound psychological adventure. Through it she feels her one-ness with the creative Mother and, at the same time, her own identity. For this is a road which she has to travel *alone* — she and the new life within her — the new life, inarticulate, helpless, unborn, yet commanding with an imperiousness which cannot be gainsaid!

Then, when her hour comes, she must give herself up to be but the medium for this new life; her body but the prison whose doors must yield to the violent assault of the being who would live free. In that hour the woman must experience a gradual descent into the depths, the distinguishing marks of her personality, of her social grade, of her race are

stripped off; until she, like her remote ancestress of old is revealed only as woman — as female creature engaged in her most fundamental task.

For the superficial and egotistic woman, this is a terrible and humiliating ordeal. To those whose natures are more profound, it brings a knowledge of the significance of life which is seldom found in any other way. Hence, in spite of the pain, child-bearing is most deeply desired by many women because of the contact with the deepest meaning of life which has come to them by this road and by it alone.

But, with the birth of the child, the task of motherhood has only begun. For its adequate fulfilment years of devoted service are necessary. The task is so long and exacting that many women become completely absorbed in it. Thinking of it as a life-long task, they lose all sense of perspective and allow their whole personalities to be merged in the rôle of mother. This is a mistake, for in the life of a woman the period given over to the bearing and rearing of children, important though it undoubtedly is, represents but one phase. Even during this period she is not only mother but also wife. If she identifies herself to her function of mother, she not only disregards the rights and claims of her husband, and seriously hampers her children in their development, but her own life loses its right proportions as well.

Maternity is a task of twenty to thirty years' duration only — a long time, but not interminable, and the wise woman will look towards its termination even while she is in the midst of its duties and will plan for the transition period when her own interests must be freed from the children to be invested in other fields.

While love for their children may form a real bond between husband and wife, there is none the less a danger that the mother's preoccupation in the physical care of the babies, especially while they are very young, may act as a barrier

separating them. For the most intimate contacts with the child, the actual physical delight which the personal care of the infant brings, especially the stimulation of maternal love through the physical act of suckling the infant as well as bearing it are experiences of the mother alone.

It is through his complete dependence and weakness that the infant is most closely endeared to the mother. This very dependence is paradoxically the great power of the weak. The child becomes "King Baby"! He can tyrannize over his mother by his appeal to her pity and, if he is not taught progressively to satisfy his own needs, his weakness will be a millstone around the mother's neck. Yet in bearing with the necessary weakness of her child, a mother learns to be merciful. The weak know no mercy. Their weakness makes demands on the strength of the strong until the last gasp, and the strong cannot turn and throw them off. Their very strength hands them over bound to those dependent on them.

But a mother who allows her children to enchain her too long will find the positions reversed — she becomes the weak one. When they grow up and cease to need her, she cannot let them go. If she has sacrificed herself to them till there is no self left except the part which lives in them, she will instinctively cling to them, and they will be compelled in self-defence to throw off her convulsively grasping fingers. Awareness of this danger would help a mother to encourage her children to be self-dependent. When the temptation comes to do something for a child who is slow or clumsy, if, by any possibility he can manage for himself, she should refrain. Even if he gets into difficulties, it is time enough to offer help when he is at the end of his own resources. This rule applies not only to physical matters but to intellectual and emotional concerns as well. If there is a relation of mutual trust and respect between them, he will come and



ask for help when he needs it. Until that time it is the part of wisdom to let reality do its educative work. In this way the individuality of both mother and child is given free scope, neither encroaching on the domain of the other.

The early years of maternity are, of course, the most absorbing. When the children are young there is no respite from the constant care their physical needs and training demand. The mother who loves her children undertakes this task with a gallant spirit. Her deepest wish is to give them the very best. This is her ideal and she is resolved to live up to it. "This is how a mother *ought* to feel!" But in the daily accomplishment of her unending task there comes to many a mother a secret knowledge that she does not live up to her own ideal. There are times when the children and their demands become almost intolerable. As a rule, she passes over these lapses in maternal feeling, considering them as the weakness of human nature, resulting from over-fatigue, or some other indisposition, or else she reproaches herself for selfishness and weakness, not recognizing that these fluctuations in her mood are absolutely inevitable. She takes no account of the rest of her personality but forces herself into being the all-loving and all-giving mother of her ideal. By this attitude she compels her children always to be the recipients, they become not only all-receiving, but also all-taking. For an over-indulgent mother invariably produces a selfish and exacting child, whose helplessness makes further demands upon the mother's attention. The child remains dependent for all initiative upon the mother whose interest is focussed entirely upon him. A "do-it-for-Mother" attitude towards matters which should be his own concern develops and produces in the child a quite false orientation to the mother's wishes and desires, instead of to his own satisfactions. This may often be seen in the nursery prob-

lems of eating and the natural functions. A healthy child eats, or should eat, because he is hungry and for the satisfaction which eating gives him. This is an independent goal, apart from "being good" or doing what he is told. But if his meal is made an occasion by which he gains the attention of his mother, his interest is diverted from his body satisfaction to an emotional satisfaction gained by compelling her attention. This false emotional relation is often carried over into the schoolroom and playground, and we hear the child calling every moment of the day: "Mother, see what I've done !" "Mother, look what I've made !" When children turn constantly in this way to their mother, she naturally finds great pleasure in their devotion and dependence, but she is gradually swallowed up by them and is laying up trouble for herself against the time when they will leave her. She has become dependent upon their dependence and she will hardly know how to live without them, for her friends have dropped off from neglect and her own activities have rusted from disuse. Her whole attention has been occupied by her children, when they leave her she will be without occupation at an age when, depleted by their continual demands through the years, she has no energy or initiative to seek new interests. When she ceases to be "mother," she may find she has lost all significance in the social order.

This outcome is inevitable unless the mother's attitude towards her child can be purified from unconscious motives which make demands upon him to fill the gaps in her own life. Over-indulgence of the child is but a mask for the suppression of his interests in favour of her own. For, if she is looking to the child to give significance to a life otherwise empty and without purpose, she puts upon him a great burden and makes demands which he can hardly be expected to fulfil. The mother by such an attitude, really devours the

child, a situation which is by no means uncommon. It is to be seen perhaps in its most flagrant form in cases of adopted children, where the demand for the child's gratitude is more openly expressed and, indeed, seems more justified than in the case of an "own" child, for whose advent the parents are alone responsible. But even here it is quite common for parents under the guise of love to demand a life-long devotion and service from their children which amounts to psychological slavery. The maternal attitude is dual. The mother loves her children and makes great sacrifices for them, but if she expects them to fill her life, her love for them is largely but a mask for self-love. Her seeming kindness is really cruelty.

If the mother takes the opposite path and does not expect her children to fill *all* of her life, that part of her interest which cannot be poured out in maternal love must seek its satisfaction elsewhere. She loves her children, it is true, and cares greatly for their welfare; but she also has a life apart from them, comprising her love for her husband, her need for friends, and for interests of her own. These calls on her time and attention are all legitimate and necessary. If she identifies herself to her mother rôle, assuming that she ought to give herself up entirely to her children's requirements, she will find herself sooner or later resenting their demands and being torn by conflicting impulses in regard to them. If she does not repress these resentments, but recognizes their cause, she will find some way to meet the problem. For if a woman is not to lose *herself*, she must keep a sense of proportion even during the children's infancy, or their demands will grow more and more exacting. Surely it is better to let the standard of perfection in which they are kept slide occasionally than for her to become nothing but an automaton. Even when viewed from the angle of the children's own welfare, this is the better way. *It is of little use to them to have the*

most perfect physical care unless their mother is a vital woman deeply fulfilled in her own life.

In emphasizing the need for a mother to make time and opportunity for her own life, I do not wish to give the impression that the child's interests can always be relegated to second place. Maternity is a serious and arduous undertaking and those who are not prepared to make personal sacrifices for it are in no position to attempt it. But in the family the individuality of each member must have due consideration; that of the mother no less than that of the child.

To this end it is possible to train the child from the very first to be alone. Children readily learn to amuse themselves happily and safely without constant supervision. Even quite tiny tots can be left alone for a part of each day with advantage. The tendency to over-stimulation inherent in modern life and modern educational methods can be balanced by solitude, and the child be given an opportunity to develop initiative and self-reliance. For the mother such a régime may be life-saving. It leaves her free for a little while to think her own thoughts uninterrupted, to get on with her work, and to attend to adult interests in a way practically impossible if the children are with her all the time.

During the infancy and early childhood of her family the mother runs a great risk of losing all contact with interests which occupy the time and attention of those who are not exclusively concerned as she is with the needs of babies. Her preoccupation with children and their interests fills many years of a mother's life. Under other circumstances these are the years when she would be most active intellectually. Her sisters who launch out into the world grapple at this age with all the current problems of the day — religion; social and intellectual questions; politics, and so forth. The mother of young children has no time for such interests and so

justifies the view that she is like a child in her inability to form valid judgements on the affairs of the world. The caustic remark of a young college graduate — "When a girl marries she is lost as an interesting companion" — carries an unpleasant grain of truth. Then, too, the stultifying effect of exclusive contact with children does not stop short at the arrest of intellectual development which so often overtakes the young mother. It has a consequence even more far-reaching and destructive. The woman who goes out into a world of adults has to meet problems of relationship — adult emotional involvements. The woman concerned only with children is likely to become and to remain childish in her emotional reactions and in her capacity for relationship. This effect is particularly unfortunate, since the major responsibility for carrying out and developing this side of life rests on the woman. It is true that the mother is not just a child with children. Her maternal attitude to the child is in itself an adult adaptation, but so long as it remains a merely instinctive attitude, it does not lead to any real psychological development. Only as the mother's instinctive attitude to the child is replaced by a consciously worked out relationship which does not overbalance the other aspects of her psyche, can it produce profound development of her personality.

It must be admitted that the urgency of never-ending duties is sometimes so inescapable as to force the devoted mother, at least for some years, to make with open eyes the sacrifice of all other cultural interests. Yet even so development need not cease if she is able to realize an inner value which is served in serving the children. If she does what she does of her own free will, in loyalty to her own love or in the spirit of a deep acceptance of *her* way, she will not, when her children go, be left inert and empty, nor will she be compelled to demand emotional recompense from them. If she redeems the in-

instinctive maternal in herself, building it up into the whole structure of her psyche, her recompense will come through the growth and development which this brings. It is the experience of her own maternity, not the bringing forth and rearing of children, which has redeeming power for herself.

To understand what this *experience of maternity* is it is necessary to inquire into the nature of maternal feeling, and find if possible that essential element which differentiates it from other instinctual emotions. The desire for the conservation of life and that at all costs is the outstanding characteristic of mother love. The mother's task is to tend and rear her child no matter what he is like. She has to work with the material given her and make the best of that. In all other spheres of activity man is free to change the material with which he works. If the material prove unsatisfactory, although the work is half completed, it can be discarded. But a child may be quite different from what the mother would have chosen, he may even be physically or mentally defective, but she cannot discard this material for a better kind. She *must* conserve it — work with it over long years and make out of it the best that she can. This entails a far-reaching discipline, which yet has its reward in the development it brings about in the mother's character.

In many women, however, love of the offspring remains of an almost animal-like quality, which cannot be called love of the *child*, of the object, at all. The child represents to such a mother a little piece of herself which has become partly separated and which she passionately loves on account of the still-unbroken bond with herself. I remember going some years ago to see a peasant woman whose infant had just died. I found her sitting in front of the fire, rocking herself to and fro and holding her swollen and aching breasts. Tears were rolling down her cheeks and she was moaning to herself in grief and discomfort, her emotional and physical pain all

mixed and confused in her consciousness. As I leaned over her, I caught the words repeated over and over again: "Oh, if only my baby were here, he could suck a bit and ease me." Here is the primitive mother who is "wailing for her children and will not be comforted" — until the next baby comes and fills her empty arms.

During the period of infancy mother and child form a natural unit, unbreakable except at the cost of great violence to both. As time goes on, however, this one-ness, at least on the physical side, is gradually broken up. Simultaneously the child should win for himself an emotional, or psychological, separateness, but the achievement of independence is a difficult task in which the mother must share if it is to be successfully accomplished. Unfortunately, the union between them, instead of being lessened by the physical growth and development of the child, may merely recede from view as the conscious evidence of its presence is outgrown. In this way it takes on a more subtle, and for that reason a more dangerous, form, which may develop into a permanent identification.

The difference between identification and real love can be clearly seen in certain rather marked cases, while in others the elements may be almost inextricably mixed. No one then is more deceived than the woman herself as to the nature of her — so-called — love for her children. For instance, the mother of a four-year-old boy said to me one day, "My son is going to be a great statesman." One pities the poor little fellow, with such a task before him. Perhaps he will grow up having no outstanding gifts, and those he has may turn to mechanics or music rather than to the political field. But the mother's ambition and unfulfilled potentialities — she was a woman with considerable ability, both social and intellectual — had fastened themselves onto the child; therefore, he must be trained to live the life she would have chosen,

had she been a man ! It had never occurred to her that she was doing anything unfair ; that she was not leaving the boy free to live his *own* life, but that she was bringing subtle pressure to bear in order to induce him to live her life for her.

This kind of identification is extremely common. It may be masked while the children are quite young, but shows more and more clearly as they reach adolescence, and becomes increasingly pernicious the longer the child is unable to break through it and assert his own personality. The trouble with the child is that he has not yet found himself. Unless he is an exceptionally well-centred individual, his real trends and capacities are buried in the nebulousness of un-found youth. The pressure from his mother's desires either distracts him from discovering his own wishes or pushes him into abandoning them. He may, for instance, prepare himself for a rôle in life for which he is not naturally fitted, with a consequent stultification of his real capacities and the possibility of a break-down in his adaptation should he realize later the true state of the case. In other instances the achievements a mother covets for her daughter may be a substitute for the fulfilment of her own ambitions. For example, she may want her to become a "social success" or to "make a good marriage," regardless of the girl's own wishes. She may be temperamentally unfitted for a life in society ; may, indeed, long for an intellectual life, or, perhaps, she falls in love with a poor man, instead of a rich one, but her identification with the mother hangs over her ominously. She is threatened with strangulation whichever way she turns. If she gives up her own wishes, she will sink into lethargy and resentment ; if she stands up for herself, the unconscious bond to the mother may reduce her to neurosis through the sense of guilt which she suffers.

For a mother, whose ambitions are tied up in this way with



her daughter, may be exceedingly fond of her and may lavish affection upon her so that the girl feels herself a criminal if she denies her mother anything. In other cases the mother may find to her great bewilderment that the girl holds herself aloof from all attentions and becomes sullen or resistant. She tries to overcome her daughter's coldness with increased demonstrations of love and redoubles her efforts to create a congenial atmosphere between them, but all to no end. She has no understanding of the girl's difficulty, and even less that her own "love" may hide an unconscious power attitude — a demand that her daughter abandon any attempt to find herself as an individual remaining instead an "appendage," a "possession" of the mother. The girl's aloofness is a reaction to the possessiveness of which the mother is unconscious, not to her obvious affection. But as the mother is unaware of her own motives, she naturally lacks the key to the understanding of her daughter's coldness. Such cases often become clear when explained from the daughter's point of view.

More than one young woman whose emotions and feelings were pitifully repressed has told me that her mother's lavish expressions of affection were simply terrifying to her and that the more she withdrew, the more demonstrative did the mother become. Further questioning made it clear that the mother was, perhaps unknown to herself, loving an ideal — my daughter — upon which she put her own connotation, never realizing that her unconscious self-seeking was making an unfair demand upon the girl to sacrifice her own individuality and become what the mother wished. The daughter, feeling herself to be totally unlike her mother's image of her and unconsciously sensing the tremendous possessiveness behind the love, had retreated into her shell like a turtle. It was her only way of combating the mother's manifestation of emotion; she feared that, were she to accept the

love, she would be compelled to make return in the form so subtly demanded. A payment which would cost her her very soul.

Feeling which is truly maternal — which takes what is given to it and makes the best of it — is in marked contrast to this mother-child identification, however much it wears the mask of maternal love. A mature woman actuated by disciplined maternal feeling takes stock of her child's capacities, develops them, gives them full opportunity to grow. The more unlike his parents he is, the more care must be taken to give him freedom to develop his own aptitudes and to grow within his own limits.

If his capacity is below the expectation of his parents they are faced with a serious problem — just what shall be their attitude towards him? Two cases, illustrating different ways of dealing with this situation, present themselves to my memory. In each the family was cultured and intellectual, and the son anything but mentally gifted. In the first instance, the boy was definitely defective and as he grew older his difficulties became more marked; even untrained observers could see there was something seriously wrong. But the father, ambitious and successful, was completely blinded by his own desires. He would not, or could not, see his son as he was — a young man but with the mentality of a child of six. As the boy grew, the father continued to engage expensive tutors and insisted that he should be entered at one of the first colleges in the States. How far the father's attitude contributed to the son's difficulties, it is impossible to say, but it undoubtedly fostered them through the emotional atmosphere it created and in a more obvious way. For, on account of the father's blindness, the boy was kept in an entirely false environment, being unable to take advantage of the education provided for him and not being provided

with any training which would have been really educative. Yet this father was convinced that he loved his son.

In marked contrast is the second case — a boy adopted by intelligent people whose interests were chiefly intellectual. They doubtless hoped that he would grow up with congenial tastes, but he was not good at his books. "Things" meant more to him than "ideas." His adopted parents recognized this aptitude and, instead of making him feel obliged to succeed in the academic world, introduced handwork into his studies and eventually gave him a carpenter's training.

In the first case, the parents were identified with the child and the idea that he might be other than they hoped never occurred to them; they loved him for what he was — flesh of their flesh; and for what they thought he should become — a fulfilment of their scheme of life. In the second case, the foster parents showed a truer *parental* feeling. They had a certain detachment, a psychological disidentification. They also loved the boy for what he was and for what he should become, but unlike the first parents they had no preconceived idea to which they attempted to fit the child. Rather, they observed what the nature of the boy was and fostered *that* nature, subordinating their own wishes and ambitions to the reality.

To be able to act in this way requires a high degree of discipline. This is *redeemed* maternal love, not just the instinctive maternal feeling of the animal and the primitive human mother. The natural *maternal* instinct is well adapted to fulfil its ends under primitive conditions, but when these conditions cease to exist, the maternal instinct in its original nature-form is no longer adapted in any ideal way to the needs of life and of the times. It becomes then, through its all-embracing character, a grave menace.

The woman's ego reaches out and may clutch at her off-

spring in order to find through them the fulfilment of her ambitions and desire for power and prestige. The children, in turn, develop to the ego stage of consciousness. Then the bond between parent and child which was at first based on an instinctive mutual love is replaced by a struggle for dominance. This condition of affairs can only be remedied through the development of greater consciousness on the part of both mother and child. It is, obviously, desirable that the step forward in psychological development should be taken as early as possible so that this false relation shall not arise. This means that the mother must initiate it. If she is successful in releasing herself from her unconscious identification with the child, and its consequent possessiveness, as he outgrows the dependence of his infancy she will be able to release him psychologically also. The struggle for power which is so characteristic of the adolescent years will be greatly diminished in violence or even entirely avoided. Some struggle there is likely to be, for the child must win his freedom, it cannot be given to him. But, if the mother herself is free from the desire to dominate, the child will have to fight only his own childishness and not the mother's autocracy. As he frees himself, a true psychological relationship will develop between them. This relationship, which is a growing one, often holds much mutual affection. As the years go on and the importance of the age gap between them diminishes, they will meet on a more equal footing, and the relationship will become an increasingly satisfying one.

If, however, the mother remains unconscious of the egoistic and possessive trends which are hidden in her love, there inevitably comes a period of conflict between mother and children. As the boys and girls grow to be young men and women, they reach out naturally enough for greater liberty and for release from the ties which bind them not only to their parents, but incidentally to their own childishness.

A struggle ensues during which the weaknesses of both mother and child are wont to be disclosed. If the mother's love has masked a desire to possess her children and find her own emotional fulfilment through the mutual dependence of mother and child, the struggle for freedom will reveal the "other side," one might say the "under side," of the maternal attitude, aptly called by Jung "the devouring mother." In nature, the prototype of this aspect of the mother is seen in the animal which eats her new-born young, and in human life today, in the woman who considers her child as her puppet, her plaything, her unique possession. In extreme cases this "devouring mother" assumes that she has the right to dispose of her daughter's whole time and strength as she sees fit — her daughter is literally her slave. How often do we hear a mother say, "One of my daughters must stay at home to look after her father and *me*," and this without consulting the daughter's own wishes at all. In other instances, the mother considers it her right to make or break her daughter's marriage at will, to make or break her career, or even — as in one flagrant case which came under my notice — to dispose of her daughter's virtue to suit her own convenience. These abuses of the maternal situation actually occur !

The bondage of the daughter comes about more often, however, not through the open dominance of the older woman, but in a far more curious way, seemingly without the direct intervention of the mother and certainly without her conscious intention. The power which determines the daughter's action and hampers her in the living of her own life is not the woman who is her mother but, instead, it is the *imago* of mother which her individual mother carries. The girl seemingly cannot release herself from the childish conviction that her mother is always right and is all powerful, as she was when the child was a helpless infant. How

often we hear it affirmed almost as a creed: "Mother is the most wonderful person !" or "Mother is always right !"

The daughter has her own problem to face in this universal situation.\* She must find a way to win release from the mother imago. Here, since we are concerned specifically with the other side of the quandary, we must ask: How can the *mother* release herself from this imago which has arisen to distort the human reality both of herself and of her child ?

The woman who permits the assumption of her perpetual rightness to pass unchallenged plays up to the child's psychological projection of mother imago. She adds her quota to the mother-child dilemma when she assumes that her sons and daughters are and always will be children, needing maternal guidance. The woman who says of her grown sons and daughters: "They will always be children to me," fails to recognize them as separate entities, as individuals apart from herself. In this way she falls into the rôle of "the mother," and will have to carry the negative as well as the positive aspect of the archetype, for they are inseparable. If she is to release herself from this necessity, she must be willing to give up her point of vantage which rests simply on the fact that she was a grown woman when they were unconscious infants, and, instead, base her relation to her child on present reality. In discussing some past action of hers which her son or daughter is questioning, she must not take her stand on the archetype and say, "I am your mother and therefore I know best. Say no more about it." She must say instead, "I did thus and so according to my best judgment *then*. I had to decide for myself and also for you because you were too young to be able to judge. I may have been wrong; if so, I am willing to change my attitude."

\* Jung, C. G., "The Dual Mother Rôle," *Psychology of the Unconscious*. Dodd, Mead & Company, 1916.

Saying this, she asserts her real superiority — the age and experience greater than theirs at the time — but she does not shelter herself behind the all-wisdom of the mother imago. This leaves for the youth a place on which to stand. He gains an idea of why decisions are made, of how judgements can change. As he grows older, he can begin to estimate for himself the *raison d'être* of his mother's decisions, and as he learns to make a responsible judgement, the mother can extricate herself from the necessity of thinking for him.

This policy by no means involves an abdication of the authority and responsibility of the mother's position, which must be carried firmly and openly as long as is necessary. Modern theorists who are afraid to exert any discipline for fear of dominating the child's personality have jumped from the frying pan into the fire, for they have removed the solid basis of authority which should mediate the reality of the external world to the child, and have placed him instead in a specialized environment adapted to his needs alone. This change does not make the child less dependent but more so, since he cannot function except in an environment where his unadapted or a-social behaviour will be condoned. If, however, the authoritative "do this," and "don't do that" are gradually replaced by the equally authoritative commands and prohibitions of the world of fact, the child learns to adapt his personal desires for immediate satisfaction to the conditions of reality which rule in a fashion even more peremptory than the most autocratic parent. Until he has learned to do this, he is dependent for warmth, shelter, and food — for life itself. The dependence of the child upon the mother is a reality. And the position of dependence involves, inevitably, submission to the authority of the one depended on. That authority can be used rightly or wrongly. It is rightly used if it is carried as a responsibility until the

child is able to stand on his own feet. It is abused if, by virtue of the power it confers, the parent assumes some mysterious and permanent superiority.

The mother's release from identification with the good-bad maternal instinct can take place only through a psychological differentiation of herself from her children, by which she grants them the right to live their own lives and die their own deaths — to suffer as well as to enjoy. These are native human rights and no one may with impunity shield another from them. The attitude which says, "I want to make you happy, to make life easy for you. I want to guard you from every breath of hardship and adversity," is terrible. It seems so kind, yet it is really so cruel. It is nothing less than an attempt to play God to the child.

There is another more subtle aspect of the mother-child problem which cannot be overlooked. It depends on the identification between the unconscious of mother and child. This is always present and persists until it is made conscious and is gradually released, either through a development which comes to some people from their life experience, or through work on the unconscious which may be voluntarily undertaken by means of psychological analysis. Because of this identification with his mother's unconscious the child is in a condition of *participation mystique* with her. Whatever lives unrecognized in her unconscious exists also in the psyche of the child, albeit in nebulous form. A recognition of this link is a most powerful incentive to a woman to grapple more seriously than ever before with the problems of her own psychological development. For when she becomes a mother, a woman incurs the deepest obligation to acquaint herself with her unconscious problems, not only for her own sake but also in order to safeguard her child from harm of a most subtle and insidious kind.

When a woman brings a child into the world, she can no



longer take the easy road of repressing her emotional and ethical problems. If she lives alone this can be done with harm to none but herself, and she can remain unconscious of all inconvenient or painful facts about herself with relative impunity. Even in a marriage, if it is childless, failure to meet her problems, serious though it will undoubtedly be to her relationship with her husband, will yet affect only those two people.

If she has children, the woman's action, however, no longer concerns only herself. To repress her problems will have just as serious effects upon her own development as when she is alone in the world, but the trouble will not stop there. Separation of the child's personality from the mother's takes place only slowly even on the conscious plane, while the unconscious union which exists between them is far harder to break. The similarity of children to their parents resulting from identification is a matter of daily observation. Small children, and older as well, take delight in copying their parents' ways and words and gestures. This mimicry is, however, practiced by the child quite instinctively, that is, it springs from an identification of the child with his parent. But we may also see an extraordinary resemblance between child and parent of another kind which is not subject to conscious control as, for instance, in facial expression, personal habits of sleeping, digestion and the like, emotional reactions, and intellectual aptitudes.

On account of its deep-seated roots, this identity is broken only very slowly. On the level of the unconscious, child and parent seem to have no dividing wall. He reacts to the mother's unspoken thought almost as if he had had the thought himself. A baby will cry if his mother is frightened, for even quite tiny children sense their mother's unexpressed emotion. An older girl once told me she always knew beforehand what her mother was going to say or do and adapted

herself accordingly. Doubtless it was exaggeration to say that she "always" knew, but certainly she had an almost uncanny gift for reading her mother's intentions.

This unconscious identification between mother and child can show itself in many most surprising ways. If the mother is a victim, for instance, of some emotional disturbance, the child may have symptoms of physical or nervous illness which are hard to account for. He may develop fears, nightmares, temper tantrums, or digestive upsets, asthma or other neurotic manifestations. This is especially likely to occur where unsolved and disregarded problems exist between the parents, especially if the real causes of the difficulty are entirely repressed. The effects of these unworked-out emotional tangles on children have been cited repeatedly. For instance, a little girl who came under my observation had a recurrent nightmare of disaster, either the house was on fire or the Indians were coming and her father was helpless to save them because he was sewed to her mother's work basket. This meant, of course, that unconsciously the child sensed the emotional situation between her parents — that her father was a child, dependent on her mother like a son, psychologically tied to her apron strings.

In another case, a little girl of six years had the most extraordinary dreams at a time when her parents were about to separate, although she naturally had not been told of their difficulties. On one occasion she dreamed she went into the garden and was assailed by the devil, dressed in scarlet, and when she sought to escape from him, she was threatened from the other side by nuns dressed in black. Finding herself in an impasse in the dream, she jumped up into the air and so escaped. Here we have the picture of a child caught in a problem beyond her years. The devil and the nuns clearly represent her parents' unsolved sexual problem. The child, unable to tackle this adult conflict, leaves the ground —

jumps up into phantasy in order to get away from it. When she was brought to me she was quite unable to adapt herself even to everyday requirements, but lived instead entirely in an unreal world.

Children are in *participation mystique* with their mother, and the illness of her unconscious will also be their illness. If they are not to be harmed, she must keep her problems in consciousness and really struggle with them — then the children will not suffer. But if she remains unaware of something of which she should be conscious the child will be affected unfavourably.

So close is this unconscious bond that it lays on the mother a serious obligation to free herself from repressions. Just as she must keep herself free from infection on the physical plane, so she must keep herself disinfected from contamination with things neglected in the unconscious. If she has a cold she keeps away from her infant in order to protect it; if influenza is raging, she will give up her concert ticket rather than risk bringing home the infection. Similarly a mother needs to keep herself psychologically clean. She cannot risk harbouring hostile or resentful feelings; if she has a disagreement with her husband, or if a problem arises in their relationship, she must clear it up lest she infect her children. This necessity acts as a powerful motive for summoning courage to work on her relation to her husband, instead of yielding to the inertia which tempts her with the suggestion, "It is not worth making a fuss about."

THE discipline of maternity then, does not consist only in the outer obligations which it imposes. The external discipline is severe in itself. The disturbed nights, the ever-recurrent duties of bathing, tending, mending, the anxiety which even trivial illness occasions, the sacrifice of intellectual and social recreation through many years, the long-continued

submission of personal wishes to childish needs — these things cannot be minimized. Then, when the children reach adolescence, a further discipline is imposed on the parents. For inevitably the young people must go with their own generation. They will discard the attitudes and beliefs for which the parents have suffered and which they cherish as their most valued achievements. Parents must watch their children experimenting with life and running into danger, and they will have to learn the hardest of all lessons — to stand by and not interfere.

But over and beyond all this, for the woman who is aware of the psychical realm, maternity imposes a discipline which reaches below the surface and strikes directly at her most hidden, most secret, selfishnesses and egotisms. Upon her depends the child's physical welfare, but she has a deeper and more fundamental responsibility than that for his body. She must bestir herself and put her own psychological house in order if she is not to jeopardize his soul.

Not an emotional involvement which seeks her own fulfillment through the child; not a concern with personal advantages; not even an altruistic love of the child can solve this problem. Only if she gives her devotion to a value beyond either his personal welfare or her own, can she find a way to solve the problems involved in the mother-child relation. She must develop within herself a conscious and mature individuality if she is not to hamper her child with a crippling mother-fixation. When she does this, she will be willing to leave her child free to find himself. She will be able, as the Chinese say, "to let go the hand." Thus through the experience of maternity, consciously accepted as a *task*, the road to psychological rebirth can be found, justifying, perhaps, the old belief that through his child a parent finds immortality.

---

## CHAPTER VII

### *OFF THE BEATEN TRACK*

NO DISCUSSION of the emotional life of women would be complete today if limited to questions of friendship and marriage. The problems of love and lovers, old as the human race, present themselves in new and different ways from generation to generation, varying with the prevailing culture, and the shifting of psychological emphasis and understanding. As a result of changed and changing attitudes of society towards matters of sexual love and expression, men and women are today compelled to meet certain personal problems in a more direct — a more conscious — manner than formerly when they were governed by social rulings and conventions.

In all epochs, the individual tends to be the puppet, often even the victim of his time. Human problems remain basically the same throughout the ages, but the contemporary form, the fashion, changes. A slow rhythmic movement takes place which is spiral rather than cyclic. The point which represents the "present day" moves around the circle, but it moves also along a line, passing from one level of consciousness to another in an evolutionary "progress" — an apparently straight line which, for all we know, may be but the arc of a larger circle. Thus two movements are discernible; first, an evolution of human consciousness from the primitive, through the antique mode, to that of modern man; and, second, a relatively rapid change in fashion from decade

to decade. The first is a long, slow movement. In each generation the moving point seems to stand still, for the change during the life time of a generation is infinitesimal. The second movement in comparison is rapid, for its "period" can be reckoned by decades, instead of by thousands of years. In this latter movement the change in one generation is *usually* slight, just sufficient to make the elders regret "the way young people act" or complain "we don't know what the world is coming to." But every now and then a cultural form changes, suddenly, overnight, with revolutionary violence. Then during the life time of one generation a strange phenomenon may be seen. Those values which the parents and grandparents held as their most sacred possession, instead of being modified, are completely overthrown. What the elders cherished is anathema to the children. Such a revolutionary change has taken place in moral and sexual standards in our time, with a crescendo since the World War.

A liberal-minded mother recently expressed to her daughter the hope that she would not indulge in promiscuous "petting." The girl replied, "Mother, *we* care only what our own generation thinks; it doesn't matter to us in the slightest what your generation thinks of us." This statement of independence is extraordinary, coming from the lips of a girl of fifteen. She and her friends seem to be consciously aware of a complete break in the cultural continuity of the race; as if they felt themselves cut off from the ancestral standpoint. Immigrants from Europe suffer from a similar cutting off, which constitutes one of the basic problems in the Americanization of newcomers. But their problem, large as it is, is small when compared with the problem of modern youth. For today a whole generation is affected by the revolutionary change in cultural form and conventions which govern sexual behaviour.

When young people claim to be concerned only with the opinion of their own generation, they do not realize that the attitude of their ancestors is not destroyed or resolved, even within themselves, by a change in the conscious or intellectual point of view. The newly held ideas and ideals take possession of the conscious field and the discarded attitude sinks into the unconscious where it exerts an influence from which no individual can escape. For the modern point of view is not an individual achievement which has been won through the assimilation of the old attitude, rather, it has arisen by a change in the *collective* standpoint, the result of a *volte face* — a turning around — so that what was formerly esteemed is now disparaged. The conventional “mode” has changed through a rearrangement of the *general* psychic contents of all young people alike. It is a collective change, manifested, however, in each member of the group. Thus the girl who today indulges in “petting,” or even in “free love,” may be actuated by a spirit just as conventional as were her aunts or great-aunts who treated young men with the utmost formality.

For, indeed, the individual is largely the puppet of his time. Many young people in seeking freedom to love as they wish and to express themselves unrestrainedly, launched out like pioneers seeking an El Dorado. Some have won through to a new land. But many who started forth so gallantly were not equipped to be pioneers. The ocean is strewn with frail barks which have not reached the shore of the promised land. Some are nearly swamped, some are hopelessly shipwrecked, and others are drifting aimlessly.

These exiles have left the old ways for good and all. The old rules based on authority are no longer applicable to them. What is right and what is wrong under the new conditions must be determined from a deeper level — from a more fundamental understanding of true morality. To go back

to the old standard of "authority" would mean inevitable regression. Those who have assumed the task of determining what is right for themselves can never again find "goodness" simply by doing what they are told. For each step forward in experience — in consciousness — makes a further advance inevitable. As Whitman says, "Now understand me well — it is provided in the essence of things that from any fruition of success, no matter what, shall come forth something to make a greater struggle necessary."

The chaos in sexual morality characteristic of the present day is entirely modern. In other ages the code has changed with the passing centuries but, as a rule, people similarly circumstanced held the same code. For instance, during the Gothic period society was exceedingly unified in its culture. During the Victorian era, a similar uniformity held; all thought alike and ideals were identical. But today — certainly in America — there is no centralized ideal of conduct or consciousness, so that what is true for one "class" of people may be entirely false for another. Moreover, these "classes," instead of being self-contained and isolated, are often intertwined; the individuals comprising them rub shoulders indiscriminately. In any group of college students, of office staffs, of teachers, of Y.W.C.A. staffs — wherever professional and business women congregate, the most marked diversity of outlook may be found which, however, is not confined to these women, but is equally marked among women and girls of the leisured and more "sheltered" classes. Some of these women are naïve to the point of childish ignorance, others are sophisticated, disillusioned, "hard-boiled" in their attitude; many, though free in their intellectual views, are, in their emotional reactions, still completely bound by convention; others, again, though no longer childishly naïve are, nevertheless, repelled by the hard, almost brutal, attitude of the sophisticated, which outrages alike



their sense of personal decency and their ideals of love and tenderness. These are all groping for a standpoint.

While the extent of the change in behaviour of men and women to each other varies enormously, some alteration has taken place since the World War in almost all levels of society and in all localities, both in Europe and in America. The direction of the change is invariably towards a greater freedom, a lessening of restraints, a breaking down of barriers and taboos. Caressing and "petting," for instance, are almost universally allowed by social custom wherever a boy and girl or a man and woman are attracted to each other. In the majority of cases this doubtless occurs only between friends who are either engaged or have an established relationship. But, in other instances, petting and caressing are indulged in between relative strangers, not as the expression of a recognized involvement and friendship, but because of a passing attraction. In still other cases, this freedom seems to have become almost the "mode" — "the expected thing" — and if a man should kiss a woman to whom he is but just introduced no one in certain groups of society would be surprised. It is hardly to be wondered at, therefore, that these intimacies, so commonly accepted, should in a certain number of cases lead to more complete sexual expression.

The readiness with which men and women allow themselves to become involved in a sexual relationship depends in no small measure on the widespread knowledge of contraceptive methods which undoubtedly influences both men and women enormously in their social and sexual behaviour. For if the sexual act is divorced from the probability of ensuing pregnancy, sexuality ceases to be so specifically a matter of *social* or collective behaviour and becomes more exclusively a personal problem since fundamentally the concern of society is with the children, and not primarily with the actions of the parents.

The consequent release of the individual from the control of the group is viewed by many with grave apprehension. They fear that widespread dissemination of the knowledge of contraceptives will inevitably lead to a great increase in immorality. Two assumptions underlie this fear: first, that sexual expression is necessarily wrong and immoral unless it has been sanctioned by a contract of marriage, and, second, that people are inherently wicked and refrain from "immoral" acts only because of the possible consequences. It is the old argument that sin is controlled only by the fear of "hell fire."

If sexual expression between a man and a woman were completely divorced from reproduction the intimacy would necessarily come to be recognized as an expression solely of their personal relationship. To the extent to which the fear of pregnancy can be dismissed is their attention focussed on the emotional situation between them. But men and women do not necessarily plunge into licentiousness or promiscuity whenever this fear is removed. I have never heard it argued, for instance, that women who have undergone hysterectomy, of whom there must be many in every large community, are especially prone to "immorality." Today through the knowledge of contraceptives the biological reasons for sexual restraint have been largely removed, so that a new morality must be sought resting on psychological considerations.

Conquest by man's ingenuity of his physical conditioning necessarily precedes any development of psychological morality. This is as true in the sexual as in every other sphere. In the far-away days of our primitive ancestors the barriers between sexual desire and satisfaction were far less stringent than among civilized peoples, although no tribe existing today is so primitive as to have no sexual barriers or taboos at all. As culture advances more and more restrictions are placed upon the free and easy satisfaction of instinct. Through the

discipline these restrictions impose, man is gradually liberated from the exclusive domination of his instincts, and becomes more humanized. A step is thus taken in the evolution of the psyche and a new phase of consciousness arises. Biological satisfaction being checked, a psychological achievement results — *romantic love* is made possible.

It may seem odd to compare this early cultural check on the free expression of sexual desire with the release from certain restrictions arising today from contraceptive knowledge and yet their effects are in one way analogous. The prohibition of society formerly prevented man from following his biological instinct entirely without thought of the consequences. As a result he was compelled to assimilate his instinctual desire; to convert it, so to say, from a purely physical urge into a psychological *emotion*, namely, love. In the present day a further transformation of sexual energy from the physical to the psychological realm is due to take place, but this time it must be achieved through the release from the control of society instead of through the submission to social regulations. Release from external control does not of itself insure a step forward in individual and conscious development. It opens the way for such a step, but also leaves the way open for a regression to a more animal level of behaviour. This regressive road does not lead back to the "age of innocence," but to "animality," for there is no *return* to innocence! The unrestrained living of instinct by civilized people is not naïve but sophisticated. Nature and instinct are exploited for self-satisfaction, diversion or the attainment of power, to satisfy personal desires, not as with animals and naïve people, to fulfil Nature's aims. This change in motive and emphasis alters the inner significance and the results of their conduct.

Formerly, whether a given sexual relation was moral or immoral, right or wrong, was determined by the edict of

society. Today men and women are taking upon themselves the right to judge in such matters. For them the external criterion of the marriage contract, which once determined sexual morality, has ceased to be the sole consideration. Other factors, peculiar, perhaps, to each situation, must determine whether it is right or wrong. But to have any standard for judgement in such matters necessitates the development of an individual morality apart from collective standards. This is an arduous task and many people today evade the whole moral issue by an exclusive reference to biological considerations as though these were paramount. If a girl's desires and her upbringing conflict, she solves her problem by saying "I do not know that contraceptives are to be relied on, and so I dare not go ahead to a sexual relation," or "It is perfectly safe, so why shouldn't I?" Girls who deal with the problem in either of these ways merely dodge the issue. They are still under the old order, having failed to take the step from the physical, or biological, realm to the psychological. Their "morality" is dependent on consequences — on "hell fire" — and is not determined by submission to inner values which have replaced the external authoritative "thou shalt" and "thou shalt not."

But for many women the question of morality in sexual matters does not depend solely on the possibility of a resultant pregnancy. For them intimacy between men and women is wrong in itself, unless it has been sanctified by marriage. It is a matter of *sanctifying* the relation — making holy what is otherwise wicked. The feeling that intercourse is inherently wrong except when sanctioned by marriage is deeply ingrained in all Christian peoples and has widespread roots among other cultured races, but it is not so universal as some people seem to think. The pagan world, under the Roman Empire, was given over to the exploitation of material and physical resources to such a degree that it was

in danger of being lost in an orgy of materialism and licentiousness. Then the Christian doctrine arose with its emphasis on the spiritual, as opposed to the carnal or material, and chastity became a virtue for the many, instead of being an ascetic practice for the few. Gradually, through the centuries, the whole attitude of the Western nations towards sexuality changed. Instead of its being considered a perfectly normal physical function without any particular moral significance, it came to be the main point on which morality and immorality were judged. A "bad woman" meant one who was promiscuous sexually or even one who was known or suspected to have had sexual intercourse outside of marriage. Men were not judged by quite the same standard. Certainly the term, a *bad* man, never had the same significance as a *bad* woman.

But customs change — and sexual customs not least. Even when the Puritan attitude was strongest sexual customs varied enormously in different communities. It is strange that each generation feels so convinced that its sexual customs and morality are God-given — for, as a matter of fact, these customs are more prone to change than any others of comparable importance.

In certain rural sections both in England and in the United States, it was customary, even during the most repressed days of the Victorian epoch, for a young couple who were "keeping company" to have sexual intercourse and, this without social condemnation, provided they married before the arrival of the first child. Indeed, it would have been considered wrong for a couple to wed until it was proved that the union would not be sterile.

In this custom we see a social factor, often overlooked, which is yet very important. It was considered right for the young man and woman to consummate their relationship provided marriage was intended if the girl became pregnant.

But it was *not* accepted as right for them to be frivolous in their intentions. They entered into no contract before the community equivalent either to marriage or betrothal, but their seriousness was assumed; promiscuity was not licensed by this custom. Expressions of love between the lovers were their own private concern; but if a family resulted the relationship became a concern of the community. The girl had to ask herself; "Will he marry me if I become pregnant?" It was her business to be sure on this point before she gave herself to him.

In these rural communities, faithlessness on the part of the young man was rare partly because of his own sense of morality, and partly because of the pressure of public opinion. A rather similar situation has developed today in urban groups. But the increased freedom for sexual expression does not carry the old sense of individual obligation, nor has it revived the power of the small community to control the actions of individuals. Consequently, a most extraordinary break-down of the old barriers may be seen — a break-down which is not safeguarded by the building up of other controls. How widespread this new attitude towards sexuality is, it is impossible to say. In some communities the old customs still hold. Doubtless, in large sections of the country young people are as chaste as their parents — neither more nor less so. But there is unmistakable evidence that, in others, the old taboos have disappeared and young people, who a generation ago would without question have been completely inexperienced in sexual matters, are now experimenting in this sphere of life. In many cases the incursions into the realm of love stop short at petting, but the number of young people who go on to complete sexual expression is very large.

When the accustomed barriers and taboos have been overstepped and no dire consequences follow, the sense that

sexuality is a forbidden and dread mystery, wanes; the whole matter comes to be considered as trivial and unimportant unless a new attitude of seriousness arises to replace the discarded code. A young woman once said to an older friend: "Sexuality is only like cleaning your teeth! Why do you make such a fuss about it?" Taken on this basis sexuality *is* trivial. It is reduced to its lowest denominator, as an animal, a physical, manifestation — an instinctive act devoid of meaning — and, if an adequate contraceptive is used, one no more significant than eating a meal. Yet indulgence in sexuality, trivial though they may consider it, seems to these young people somehow obligatory. One girl, hardly more than a child, expressed this idea when she said, "There must be something wrong with me, I don't have sexual affairs." Their actions give the lie to their expressed opinions. Sexuality is not and cannot be trivial — it is important. But the importance formerly expressed in the taboos surrounding the act is now found in the opinion that "there must be something wrong with me if I don't," as though on this criterion rested the child's claim to normality.

The psychological importance of sexuality is naturally to be sought in its significance. But significance was denied by both these young women whose trivial attitude precluded any possibility of *love*. An emotional experience of any depth was impossible for them, while even a satisfactory physical experience would be unlikely. For if physical sexuality can be taken at any time without check, desire never heaps up, the "potential" is always low and no psychological or cultural achievement can be expected.

If, however, the sexual urge meets a barrier which is real, the potential of desire is raised. An artificial barrier, wilfully imposed, does not have the same effect. For instance, if a woman refuses to allow a man to carry his caressing to its logical conclusion, not because of a real moral scruple but

from coyness, he may be tantalized into greater ardour or he may turn away in disgust. Whatever the outcome, inasmuch as the barrier depends only on her whim, nothing will be gained. But if she refuses to have intercourse with one whom she dearly loves, not out of coyness, but through allegiance to a moral value, which is a real value to her, the potential of their love will mount behind the barrier she interposes, and the accumulated energy may enable them to overcome the obstacles to marriage which at first seemed insuperable.

Young people whose love meets a check turn rightly to overcome the obstacles in the external world, for the morality of young people is necessarily a matter of group conscience. With older people under similar circumstances the love energy heaped up by the barrier may turn within instead of to the overcoming of external obstacles. A change is thus brought about in their psychological attitude. Their love impels them to revise their moral standard. Older people who have really accepted and assimilated the collective morality of their group may by the help of this heaped up potential sometimes achieve a more conscious morality through overcoming the psychological obstacles and inertia within themselves.

This is a difficult task, for the separation of the individual from the dominance of the group is a slow process. In the infancy of the race the group is everything, the individual nothing. Only gradually, and very partially, throughout the evolution of the human race has individuality been gained. Each human being, too, is, in childhood, merely a member of a group, with no individual rights or attainments of his own. Gradually, as he grows up he separates himself from the parents and from the group. But this separation is in the majority of cases only partial. His parents can give him independence in certain ways, but in the last analysis a young



man has to gain his own independence. For if his parents give it to him he is beholden to them for this gift and so is not independent. Inevitably a time comes when he must take for himself the right to be himself, or must remain forever dependent on the conventional rules and regulations of his family or of society. In particular, the right to possess his own instinct cannot be given to him. He has to take it for himself, and that usually in defiance of the prohibition of his own parents or of society.

Through the sanctioned rite of marriage an attempt to domesticate the sexual instinct has been made so that it may serve the purposes of mankind. The majority of people make their adaptation to the divine fire within them, and to society without, through this rite. But sexuality is an untamable instinct; it works in a perfectly unregenerate fashion, refusing to be domesticated. Sexual love is a spark of the divine fire implanted in man, through which he may find his way to heaven and be identified for the moment with the gods, or may be damned eternally, scorched by the fire which he has impiously sought to grasp for himself. This "divine fire" has been carefully damped down in marriage to a glow just sufficient to warm the hearth. Perhaps the right to this spark can be *given* the young by their elders. Yet in the old days, marriage by capture from a hostile tribe was frequently the only possible way of obtaining a bride; the custom still persists as a marriage form in many tribes even where marriages are arranged between the man and woman or their families, for the actual marriage ceremony is an acted abduction; while in America this old form is still hinted at in the custom of pursuing the bridal pair when they leave for their honeymoon. Thus even when the torch is passed on to light a new hearthstone, some hint is given in marriage customs that — with all the sanctioning of Church and community, with all the paternal blessing and the "giving" of

the bride — something remains which the young people must steal, must take for themselves against the opposition of the community.

Symbolically these customs relate to the psychological necessity of stealing the right to be adult — separate from the group, individual. This is the “necessary crime.” It often occurs in the dreams of those who are about to separate themselves from the group and to become individual. For instance, a woman dreamed that she found her name flower in a public park. She was delighted, gathered the flower, plant and all, and walked off with it. Immediately she saw park guards bearing down upon her. Her first impulse was to hide her trophy, but, taking courage, she held it aloft like a standard and walked triumphantly out, unmolested by the guards. This dream indicates that she finds *her* flower — her individuality — growing in the public gardens and takes it. Really, she steals it, for the flowers in a park belong to the public, not to individuals. But she recognizes it as her own and dares to take it and make it her standard. In her waking life she must take her own individuality, her own nature, as her standard and act in accordance with it, being guided no longer only by rules and conventions.

In myths the acquiring of individuality, of personal autonomy, is always represented as a theft, a stealing of something which the gods have reserved for themselves; for to be individual is to be god-like. Thus we have Adam and Eve stealing the knowledge of good and evil — a knowledge in their case closely linked with the stealing of instinct. The story of Prometheus stealing the divine fire and bringing it to earth has the same motif.

Through sexual love, man experiences most nearly perhaps the divine fire, and steals from the gods that supreme and god-like gift. But in the myths only the hero was capable of this deed. Many people today, feeling the need of re-

newal, want such an experience, but they want it for their personal satisfaction. The degenerated spirit of democracy abroad today says, "Why not? Everyone may have everything. (Any boy may be president!) Instinct is for our own uses. It does not belong to the group, or to the aristocracy or to the parents; it is ours for the taking." In such a spirit of self-seeking the divine fire cannot be found. The gods withdraw. But the pleasure-loving are often as incapable of recognizing this fact as of seeking for anything except their own pleasure. They are not capable of stealing the Promethean fire, the rôle of hero is beyond them. They are more like bad boys playing with forbidden pleasure, by which they hope at least to have fireworks on the Fourth of July!

Others are less defiant in their determination to secure the best for themselves. They are more law-abiding in their relation to the powers that be. Yet they are no less determined than the former group to get what they *want*. They take an attitude which seems to say, "We ought to be able to have our love affairs where we need them. It is for our good to be free; let society sanction this for us; or let *some* authority sanction it. Let it be made respectable by a 'good word,' such as 'trial' marriage or 'companionate' marriage; or let it be made of very slight importance, so that to take it may be a peccadillo, not a sin; an error, not a crime; a thing of daring to be boasted about in whispers, to be called 'petting' or 'going the limit,' then no one can be very cross at us or take our actions seriously." This attitude belittles the situation and can only result in making the affair trivial and in keeping the offenders children. No freedom is to be gained by it, no renewing experience of instinct or of life will be found. It is not possible to steal the Promethean fire with the gods looking on and acquiescing in the crime with paternal good nature.

EXTRA-MARITAL relations of women differ in their problems and conditioning according to the status of the individual concerned. First there are the quite young women and girls who often meet their first erotic experience while still in their teens and are called on to determine their attitude to this fundamental problem when their knowledge of life is so limited as to afford them practically no guidance — and this too at an age notorious for its emotional susceptibility. Formerly the girl was most carefully guarded at just this age from the consequences of her enthusiasms and inexperience; today, she is too frequently left to her own guidance and her own devices.

The conditions of the second group of women are entirely different. These are the married women for whom marriage has not proved a complete and final solution of their emotional and sexual problems. The frequency of remarriage immediately after divorce witnesses to the prevalence of such situations. A few years ago an immediate remarriage would have ostracized a woman from respectable society; now, except in flagrant cases of infidelity, the new marriage is dismissed with a shrug and the woman is accepted as before. Sometimes, however, a woman in such a situation does not seek divorce but remains in the home of her husband although she is in love with another man. Naturally situations of this kind are either disguised or kept entirely secret, but an intimate scrutiny of the life-histories of many married couples in America today reveals the fact that such situations are not uncommon. An average, normal woman may be compelled to recognize that in her inmost heart she is not entirely monandrous, but that a man other than her husband can attract her emotionally and physically — a situation which in the not remote past any moral and respectable woman would have striven to hide from herself at all costs.

The third group is made up of women who have chosen

work and an independent career, instead of marriage. During the early years of adult life their attention and energies were occupied with mastering a profession. Not until they reach the middle thirties are they free, as a rule, to turn to the emotional side of life, when it is by no means uncommon for a woman of this type to fall in love. Her problem will be quite different from that of either the young girl or the married woman and her way of solving it, also, must be different from theirs.

DURING the late teens and early twenties, young people usually experience for the first time emotional involvements which stir them more deeply than the friendships of their childhood. They may recognize this deeper stirring as erotic; or it may seem to them entirely idealistic and not sexual at all. Such complete unconsciousness was perhaps the rule forty or fifty years ago, it is still less uncommon than one might suspect from the modern freedoms of this generation. Nevertheless, the absence of restraint in behaviour has resulted in a widespread awareness, precocious, perhaps, of the sexual element in "young love." For the freedom to exchange kisses and caresses produces a situation in which awareness of the physical aspect of the emotion can be aroused, and the openness with which such situations are discussed leads to a further break-down of barriers. As a natural result of all this, many young people see no reason why they should not follow their impulse to experiment with each other quite freely. Having once overstepped the barriers of conventional behaviour, they find themselves in deeper water than they had anticipated and the problem arises, "Where shall the line be drawn?" and this asked by some who are hardly more than children.

Now, in beginning a relation to each other involving caressing and petting they are but following the *mode* of

their own generation. Many of them are emotionally quite immature, and kissing and hugging really expresses the character of their love more truly than would a specifically sexual embrace, and, in many instances, Nature herself steps in and determines for them where the line shall be drawn. Take, for example, the story of her love affair which a girl of fifteen confided to me. She and the boy with whom she was in love had gone to a dance together and in a secluded spot began to embrace each other with increasing excitement. He was staying at her home and begged to be allowed to go to her room that night. They each intended to carry the relation through, being convinced that the intensity of their love justified the extreme step. Once home and the house quiet, the boy went to her. But then Dame Nature asserted herself. The girl was so sleepy that nothing remained for the boy to do but to go back to bed where he also promptly went to sleep. This, I am sure, is the story of many cases. The young lovers themselves are deceived as to the nature of their own emotions. They think their involvement demands complete sexual expression, for that is the prejudice of the day; in reality the true nature of their love is expressed through affection, through kisses and caresses, which completely satisfy their emotional needs.

Others are not so fortunate. Physically they are mature, even in their teens, and the body stirred by the "childish" kissing may insist and may force them, emotionally immature though they be, to carry the physical relation through to the end. Naturally, the physical act of intercourse cannot have for them any very profound emotional significance, and they are disappointed. This particular embrace to which they had pinned their hopes, expecting through it to experience "heaven itself" — in the living — fell flat, and brought disillusion. The conclusion drawn is that sexuality is not as important as they thought, it seems rather trivial and insig-

nificant. In her more sober moments the girl may even admit to herself that it is a little disgusting, for girls suffer more than boys from this kind of disillusionment. Sexuality for the woman is more closely linked with her feelings; it is more intimately a part of herself than it is for the man. So it follows that for a girl to separate herself from her own sexuality and to treat it as something apart from herself, an unimportant action indulged in for the stimulus and pleasure of the moment only, results in a hardness which is peculiarly destructive to the woman's values. For a boy to take this attitude is also extremely regrettable, but it does not seem to destroy his specifically masculine values in the same way that it destroys the feminine values of the woman.

After such a disillusioning experience, a girl may well lose her sense of the sacredness of love. She feels that sexuality does not mean much either way, but since men want it, why refuse, if by acquiescing she gains and holds their attention. Through such an attitude she inevitably loses touch completely with the deeper side of her own nature. Sexuality can never be trivial to a woman who is in touch with the feminine principle, the Eros, within. Only by repressing and disregarding her emotions can she accept the embrace of a man who does not profoundly stir her, and if she does so accept it, she no longer functions as a woman, but takes her sexuality in masculine fashion. The majority of girls, however, who have fallen into this way of acting are really entirely unawakened—their emotions are sleeping. Young men are, as a rule, more aware of their own instincts, more mature in physical sexuality than girls of the same age, even though they are as unconscious emotionally. Indeed, the man's physical intensity is often a complete mystery to the girl. "Men put so much energy into love-making," a girl once said to me, "I can't think how they do it—they are so intense about it. I only wish they would be quick and get

through, so that we can attend to something more interesting."

A girl who allows herself to be guided in this way by the man's desire loses touch more and more with herself. Perhaps she yielded at first to an *idea* of what would bring her happiness. She was disillusioned by the event. She thought that she had experienced all that life had to offer in that field. "The novelists were wrong, there was nothing much to it. But," her reflections would continue, "if that is all there is to life why wait for something more satisfactory, better exploit it for all it is worth." With such an attitude a girl readily goes from petting to promiscuity, and by the time she reaches twenty, she may well be completely disillusioned, completely bored with life. She has run through the gamut of sensations — what more has life to offer !

The frequency of this attitude among the younger generation is a real menace in certain groups of society. Young women who are utterly worn out, *blasé*, done with life, before they reach the age of thirty, constitute a social problem of some magnitude. The fact that they have never touched the deeper aspects of experience at all does not occur to them. They snatched at happiness — life was to them an orange which they sucked dry — and by twenty or twenty-five they are poor, pitiful, little "hard-boiled" babes. They submitted to nothing save their own desires and tried to satisfy themselves on the pleasure principle. And even pleasure failed them.

In the past young people were safeguarded from this particular pitfall through the moral control of society. The decree that physical impulses and desires must be held in check until a marriage contract had been entered into raised the whole question from the level of temporary physical satisfaction to a serious undertaking. If there is not to be a regressive movement of society the increased freedom which



the individual enjoys today must be accompanied by a greater, not lesser, sense of personal responsibility.

Among human beings sexuality is not merely a means for propagation and the satisfaction of the generative impulse, as it is with animals; it has been largely "made over," appropriated to the service of the emotional and psychological life. On account of this change, it has become the most intimate expression of love, of relatedness, between two human beings. But in the transition from the biological to the psychological sphere there is, as always, a pitfall into which man can only too readily fall — the pitfall of the ego, of personal pleasure and satisfaction. The awakening of psychological consciousness and the power to control nature open the door for the selfish exploitation of a realm of life rich in possibilities. Formerly, that realm was guarded, first, by biological reality, the bearing of children, which imposed an external discipline not to be evaded; and, second, by social authority with its prohibitions. At the present time, both these external guardians have relaxed their control to a great extent and adventurers seeking freedom, if they are not to fall into pleasure-seeking selfishness with its inevitable disillusion, must find for themselves another no less compelling reality capable of imposing the limits and barriers which alone make possible a further step in development. In the past, this reality was masked because men and women were not free and, consequently, the situation between them had to remain nebulous. But today with the release from external compulsions, they can at last begin to explore the tangled web of emotions and desires which form their relationship. In this way the *nature* of the relationship between them is made conscious, and they embark on the new adventure of the spirit.

Those who seek a deeper truth through their love experience will be guided in their actions by the reality of the actual

situation, instead of by a desire for a particular kind of physical satisfaction. If the relationship is slight, then intimacies will be correspondingly curbed. If the association is by its very character likely to be of short duration, it is the part of wisdom to avoid indulgence in physical expressions of affection. The younger generation, today, tends to value physical sexuality as a good in itself. If there is the slightest stirring of erotic feeling, the physical sensations are nursed along — made the most of — the body being forced to function sexually on any and every pretext. Hence the instinctual energy is frittered out. As the Chinese say, "It runs away to the shrimps." This attitude is natural enough in the children of a Puritan ancestry — a compensation perhaps for the code which makes sexuality evil in itself.

In other cases a young man and woman may be deeply in love. The intensity of their emotional preoccupation with each other seems to warrant the most intimate physical embrace but before taking this step they would do well to consider most seriously whether their love may not be better expressed through marriage and the formation of a permanent relationship, for this alone can take into account not only the personal aspect of their feeling but also their responsibility as members of society. A scrutiny of the motives which lead to a neglect of this social aspect of the situation will often reveal a sinister *reservatio mentalis* which is like the germ of a fatal disease threatening the security of their love.

For if the relationship, important as it is to them emotionally, is lived clandestinely, it will inevitably separate them from their fellows, and lead to an isolation against life itself; for love, when it is anything more than a mutual selfishness, on the part of the lovers, brings with it the wish to enter life hand in hand. Hence the strength and depth of their love are best expressed and their permanence most likely to be

assured, not by snatching at the fulfilment of immediate sexual desire, but by seriously attempting to build up a stable relationship. Marriage is the established form for this, and it is undoubtedly the ideal towards which young lovers should work. If they do not want to accept the responsibility of marriage, the burden of proof that they have a right to evade it lies on their own shoulders.

In many cases there are external difficulties and obstacles to marriage which seem insuperable. The first romantic love often comes to young people who are still partially or entirely dependent on their parents, for adolescence is prolonged today far beyond the age of physical maturity. If these dependents wish to take upon themselves the privileges of the adult, whether in terms of marriage or in terms of the freedom to carry through a love affair on an adult level, that very desire may become the incentive which enables them to cross the barrier between childhood and maturity and, by facing the difficulties, to win the right to independence. But privileges always involve responsibilities which cannot be shirked with impunity. There is something exceedingly deteriorating to the character in claiming the prerogatives of a state to which one has not grown up. In most primitive tribes the young men are not permitted to marry until they have proved themselves worthy to be considered men, and on this point, a civilized society would do well to be guided by the customs of a primitive one.

When the love is genuine there is no need to fear that difficulties will destroy it. On the contrary, an amorphous attraction is often brought to a focus by obstacles, until what was a selfish desire to possess becomes a really heroic power to create. It has frequently happened that a young man who has been willing enough to remain a child, and be economically dependent on his father, has found through the

experience of falling in love, the energy to take up the burden of manhood. Thus is love conducive to growth, even as growth increases the capacity to love.

The lovers' own attitude towards the obligations of marriage often gives a clue revealing the true nature of the involvement. The desire for union is the outcome of one of two underlying motives: first, an intention, perhaps completely unrecognized, to exploit the situation for pleasure, power, and the ego; or, second, the wish to develop it for values beyond these personal ones. Unfortunately, however, the early signs of these two emotional attitudes are often indistinguishable. For during the "in love" stage, the beloved truly appears as the most coveted prize, the most precious asset, and this enormous value can easily deceive the lovers themselves, their eagerness to seize it appearing as an unselfish aspiration for a spiritual gain, even when it is being exploited for pleasure and power. In this latter case the motive is far from being love. It is just at this stage that the lovers' attitude towards the responsibilities of marriage gives the clue to their motive in the relationship; it shows how much they are willing to invest.

Perhaps the greatest advantage of marriage in the case of young people lies in its avowed purpose of permanence. If the lovers live their love through to sexual expression the passion and glamour almost inevitably pass. The urgency arising in this kind of romantic love is nature's way of overcoming the difficulties opposed to physical union; when this is accomplished the urgency recedes. In a state of nature a period of service and discipline follows in the child-bearing which usually results. In modern love, if pregnancy is avoided, there is grave danger that the lovers may lose the value of personal development once insured through the discipline of child bearing and rearing. For at the point when the first flush of passion has passed, difficulties arising

from differences in temperament usually make their appearance. Personal desires which seemed to coincide during the period of courtship are now found to clash and, if there is no external bond between them, the lovers may and frequently do part, perhaps in anger, perhaps in an indifference as inexplicable to them as their first infatuation. Each will assert that the other has changed. "He is not the same man I loved." "She is not the woman I thought her."

This "inexplicable" infatuation and "inexplicable" later indifference witness that the original "falling in love" resulted from a projection of anima, or of animus, to the loved one. Each was really completely ignorant of the other's true nature, for each saw only the projection of his own soul figure. When the projection was challenged by an assertion of the other's ego, it fell away, the illusion passed and it seemed to be the other's fault. If, during this period of disillusion, the two were not united by a social bond, there would be nothing to hold them together; the anima and the animus would quite likely be projected immediately to some new object and the search for a magic rightness, for Prince Charming and La Desirée, would begin all over again. The infantile demand for freedom, the wish to remain foot-loose, would again take possession and the opportunity for development, which discipline alone can bring, be lost.

In submitting seriously to marriage, the contracting parties give, as it were, hostages to fate. They are forced to wrestle long and hard with the problems of that stage of disillusion, certain to come, in which the first flare of passion must be transformed into the steady glow of a love based on mutual confidence — a confidence which can be won only by working through difficulties together. To this end they are pledged by openly taken vows and when misunderstandings arise something beyond their own personal inclination holds them together and forces them to struggle for the develop-

ment of real understanding. They are no longer at liberty to regard temporary disappointment in each other as a reason for throwing up the relationship. For they have undertaken a joint enterprise, which everything decent within them demands shall be worked out through a willed determination to make their marriage as satisfactory as possible. If the emotional involvement is serious enough to warrant complete sexual expression between the lovers, then the relationship between them must be considered of sufficient importance to be held to and worked on even when, or if, the love recedes from consciousness for a time. By *work on the relationship* I do not mean the acceptance of a *conventional* marriage with a mere smoothing over of difficulties, but something far more conscious and active.

Through a determination, unswervingly held, to work through their difficulties the anima or animus begins to be disciplined — a basic necessity for the development of any inner morality. For no great psychological development is possible if the love life remains on a casual or cheap level. Development of love cannot take place until the individual is so deeply in earnest that he is willing to invest his full strength in working out to the last possible step the actual relationship in which his sexuality is involved.

The love of young people probably finds its best opportunity to flourish and develop through marriage, but they must choose for themselves. If they decide not to marry or decide to postpone marriage, the decision for or against sexual expression of their love must also be theirs. If they decide for it, the outcome will depend on their own feeling and on their ability to take the responsibility of the decision on their own shoulders. Older people may feel it a pity for the young to experiment in a way which, as the saying is, takes the bloom off their youth and which may leave them hard and disillusioned, but the problem is not theirs to deal with. The

lovers have to decide. There is no judge competent to decide for them. For this whole problem is part of a cultural movement, whose final outcome lies obscured in the future. It is so complex, so individual, and the state of morality today is so chaotic that no sweeping generalization can possibly cover the whole case. One fact, however, remains as true today as ever: if an individual's attitude towards his own actions is trivial, he reduces his experience of his personal life to a trivial level, and he becomes disillusioned and indifferent. To take life solely on the pleasure principle leads inevitably to satiety and boredom. Man is not just a pleasure-seeking — that is, a degenerate — animal; he is also a living spirit and can find satisfaction in life only through the devotion of all his powers to some end beyond his own personal pleasure. This end beyond themselves is for young people, as for others, to be found through taking their love more, not less, seriously.

THE temptation to take emotional involvements lightly is very general, even among the unmarried and where, as in the second class of women, there is a previous emotional obligation, the temptation is almost overwhelming. When a married woman is attracted to another man, she hopes that an attitude of nonchalance will deprive the situation of its seriousness and minimize any disturbing effects. Both men and women tend instinctively to protect themselves in this way from involvements which they fear may demand more than they are prepared to give, and which, in particular, may upset the *status quo*. The attitude is rather like the proverbial ostrich psychology, which hopes by looking away to keep unpleasant facts in check. But, as in the case of the ostrich, whose action only exposes him to danger which he might otherwise avoid, so it is also with humans; a deliberate assumption of unconsciousness leaves one vulnerable at every

weakest spot. And what, in any case, is the use of such an attitude ? If the involvement is really slight, no harm will be done by looking at it squarely. On the contrary, such frankness will bring its reward in release from anxiety and in consequent freedom to act entirely naturally and without restraint. If the affair is serious, no good will be accomplished by pushing it out of sight into the unconscious where its movements, its actions and effects cannot even be observed until they break forth in some compulsive and unadapted fashion. If there is serious mischief afoot, it is just as well to be informed about it.

Ostrich psychology, nevertheless, is very general. It is frequently manifested by unmarried women, while to the married woman who finds herself becoming involved with a man other than her husband, it is an almost irresistible temptation. To conceal from herself the extent of her own emotional involvement is a foolhardy action which a woman of common sense could hardly justify to herself if she were fully aware of what she was doing. But so great is the desire of most people to avoid personal responsibility and throw the onus of their actions onto fate or circumstance that consciousness in such a situation is the exception, not the rule. One cannot but suspect, however, that a woman who remains wilfully unconscious is actuated by an unrecognized desire to snatch at a satisfaction in opposition to the moral code she consciously holds and to evade the conflict which awareness of these opposing trends in herself would precipitate. She is pledged to fidelity. The law holds this pledge to refer to her actions, but all old-fashioned and the more serious-minded of progressive women consider it as applying not only to their overt acts but also to their feelings. Not a few modern people take their marriage vows, it is true, with a secret understanding that if either of them should cease to love the other and fall in love with someone else he would be free.



Yet a marriage contract, none the less, implies an intention towards permanence in the relationship, and faithfulness towards the partner.

In many cases, however, where marriage was entered into as a matter of expediency and in some even where there was originally a real emotional involvement, with the passing of the years a sort of blight settles over the couple. The woman had hoped that marriage would make everything right, that she would never be bored or dull again. Yet she finds, as time goes on, that her husband has lost his glamour, has become an everyday person who is always at hand and whose characteristics, personal and mental, have through their very familiarity ceased to beguile her. Her marriage has become unutterably dull; convention rules at every point. Even the intimate side of the marriage has fallen into a routine in which all spontaneity withers. This is the brief story of many marriages which ultimately end in the divorce courts.

Not uncommonly a woman whose marriage has grown humdrum becomes aware that romance and adventure are calling to her from next door. The man who attracts her may be suffering from a similar eclipse in his marriage. He begins to pay her attentions, to tell her that she is unappreciated, that even though she insists on looking and acting "middle-aged," she is still young and fascinating. At first she is merely flattered and pleased. Then something in her awakens in response to the new interest. She regains her lost good looks and begins to find her dull life growing fresh and interesting. If she is the average woman with a sense of responsibility towards her marriage and her children she generally takes the new situation lightly. At first it probably is light and in many cases undoubtedly remains so — a pleasant interlude causing a few sighs but no broken hearts. But occasionally the emotional tone changes, and the man from next door comes to occupy a larger part of her conscious

thoughts and of her daydreams. Most women at this point, becoming aware of danger, attempt to control the situation by an act of will. Certain warnings from within tell them that their involvement threatens to become serious, so, by persuading themselves that it is quite trivial and insignificant, at the most a harmless flirtation, they try to curb the emotional fever before it gets out of hand.

In other cases, a more violent disruption of the *status quo* takes place through the woman's sudden infatuation. She may find herself precipitated into the depths of an emotional upheaval of which she had never dreamed herself capable. The newcomer perhaps awakens in her possibilities of love which her relationship with her husband had left completely untouched. In such a case she *cannot* take lightly the experience of her own nature which has come to her, possibly quite unsought, sweeping her off her feet, or at any rate threatening to do so. The temptation is to give up her marriage no matter at what cost. In the heat of such an infatuation the claims of husband and children lose all perspective and appear burdens from which she must free herself, regardless of the damage to them. Or, on the contrary, the conflicting claims of the old love which is reinforced by her sense of duty, and of the new one which offers undreamed-of fulfilment, may cause such turmoil and distress that they threaten to break her altogether.

This problem of marriage and divorce and wandering emotional attachments is so difficult and complex that one would much prefer not to speak of it at all. But it is so common that at least an attempt must be made to clarify it. For any woman may find herself caught into the turmoil of these problems of the twentieth century despite her real integrity, when she will be torn by the conflicting claims upon her loyalty and devotion. It is not my place to pronounce on the relative morality of one course of action as over against an-

other. Each woman must solve her life problem in her own way.

Divorce is the most popular expedient resorted to today in such cases. But it is not very unusual for the woman to accept her friend as lover, either with or without the knowledge of her husband. The effect on the impressionable minds of children who are witnesses of these situations in the personal lives of their parents must inevitably be far-reaching. A generation is growing up whose innate sense of the sanctity and permanence of marriage is profoundly modified through their early experience of divorce and of broken families.

The demand that a woman must love, honour, and obey her husband all her life is a corollary to the belief in the life-long permanence of marriage which forms the basis of the old morality. This moral code assumes tacitly that these pledges are entirely within her own power to keep. In many sections of society this assumption is being questioned today, and threatens to be completely overthrown as it becomes more openly recognized that love is by no means entirely under the personal or conscious control of the individual. In the past if the ideal of conjugal love could not be maintained in practice, at least the conventional form was upheld, and the substitution of duty for love, and the suppression of any wandering affections was often successfully accomplished. It is not so easy in these present days to repress the errant emotions. The solidarity of the conventional assumption which supported that attitude has been broken into from many directions. Women who hold themselves entirely bound by their marriage vows may not consider a little flirting or even a little philandering with a third party, wrong or undesirable, let alone dangerous. But such flirting may, perhaps, prove to be an entering wedge. Repression to be reliable has to be complete; a flexible attitude in such matters may well frustrate the attempt to remain unconscious. But

if the modern woman indulges in a freedom of action which the old code prohibited, while she yet maintains her conscious adherence to the letter of the old morality, a further repression of instinct and the emotions will be necessary to prevent collapse. This repression goes even deeper than the one it replaces, and accounts for the fact that many women who indulge today in a freedom of action, which would have been impossible a generation ago, do not find themselves stirred by it. The truth is something within them becomes cold and aloof. For instinct withdraws before an exposure which is not warranted by the emotional situation. This deeper repression may be very marked in young people brought up with ultra-modern ideas and habits in regard to sexual matters. If children are taught, by example, if not by precept, that modesty or any reserve is necessarily mere prudishness, and if sexual matters are discussed before them and explained in rational terms as if love were merely a matter of anatomy and physiology, they are likely to suffer, when they grow up, from a very severe repression of instinct and emotion. Women brought up in this way may fail to be touched in their deeper natures even when they believe themselves to be in love, and marriage itself may not be able to bridge the gap which divides their rational, materialistic, conscious attitude from instinct and love which always need a shadowed place for their unfolding and which emerge from the hidden realm of the unconscious only when the conscious attitude is friendly. Such people are protected from conscious conflict by their repressions.

But a married woman who is neither completely out of touch with her own emotions through such a repression nor completely rationalistic and "hard-boiled," is not protected from the possibility of a severe moral conflict if she departs from the conventional code of honour. If she is not prepared to face this conflict arising from the challenge *within her-*

*self* of the old moral code, she had best be careful how she disregards the minutiae of the old conventional rule of behaviour. But there are today hundreds of women who want to eat their cake and to have it too. They want the security which the old marriage code gave, but they also want the pleasure and excitement which the freer conventions of the day permit. For those whose marriage holds deep and growing emotional satisfaction and for those, also, who have discovered the secret of building conscious relationships, it may be possible to hold these two attitudes simultaneously. Others undoubtedly "get by" through the repression of the more dynamic elements in their natures. There remain, however, a few who do not fall into either of these two groups. For them the desire to obtain what seem the advantages of both epochs proves their undoing. They have tried to straddle the split between two cultural attitudes; they have not held to the safety and restriction of the past, nor have they committed themselves to the uncertainties and promise of the future; and their position becomes increasingly untenable as the new culture pulls away from the old.

The chief emphasis of the new way is on loyalty to the feelings. From every side one hears such dicta as: "Where love is, there is the true marriage." "If love has gone, marriage is no longer binding," and the like. If personal feelings were the *only* consideration, one wonders why have marriage at all? The exclusive emphasis on inclination is as one-sided as the old assumption that the wife could by an act of will give her love where duty said she ought. But marriage has two sides, not one only, and if any deeper and more individual morality is to be worked out in our day to replace the conventional one now tottering to its fall, both aspects must be taken into consideration.

In the past the collective aspect of marriage was empha-

sized to the exclusion of more personal considerations. To-day personal considerations take precedence. Many people even jump to the conclusion that because love has gone the whole marriage is destroyed, forgetting entirely any other obligation. A more responsible attitude to the social aspect of marriage would make the necessity for divorce much rarer than it is at present even where one of the partners has fallen in love with a third party. For marriage is more than a sanction for sexual love; it is a partnership, a joint enterprise, which cannot be abandoned lightly on account of a change of mood however compelling and significant. The children, if there are any, constitute a liability and responsibility which cannot be lightly discounted. Even if love has gone elsewhere a more serious attitude would perhaps enable husband and wife to pull together until port is reached and their children launched.

A woman in such a position is under a peculiarly binding obligation to try to work out an understanding relation with her husband. For although the deeper love between them may be dead, there still remains the possibility of comradeship and loyalty. Through a recognition of all aspects of the situation they may be able to maintain a working relationship, worth while both for themselves and the children. The values of the home will, needless to say, be less than they would if husband and wife were in deeper harmony, but at least by such an arrangement it may be possible to make a place of emotional security for the children. The greatest devotion and self-discipline, will, however, be required if they elect to follow such a difficult path.

A woman who tries to carry her emotional life with one hand and her marriage with the other will find herself constantly under the necessity of the most rigid self-discipline if she is to prevent a clash between the two. Her loyalties to husband and lover may well conflict within herself and

misunderstandings will always threaten from without. It is a perilous path to tread, and one hardly to be recommended. No woman can possibly help slipping over a precipice unless she can find a means to keep in very close touch with the principle of relatedness within herself and can constantly purify her own motives. For as soon as she puts out her hand to make use of the position of power in which she finds herself, she will inevitably be caught in jealousies and possessiveness. One fact, however, stands out clearly, namely, that if she faces the situation with courage and a conscious attempt to do her best she will develop psychologically. Perhaps this is all that life is meant to accomplish.

Marriage fosters and develops the ability to take a responsible attitude towards a willed relationship. This is a very valuable achievement but it has the disadvantage that it tends to overemphasize the conventional side of relationship, the "shoulds" and the "oughts" of living with a partner. These obligations are in contrast to a "free" relationship. For instance, the wife feels herself under an obligation to bring "good feeling" to the daily happenings, the mistress does not need to do so in the same way. The wife must hide her deeper reactions so as to be cheerful before the children, she is under a necessity to meet her guests with the correct manner, to be interested in the interests of her husband, whether she is really interested or not — every wife could multiply the list of "oughts" indefinitely. The attempt to fulfil these obligations to the exclusion of all else will eventually stultify life, even though the discipline they entail is valuable.

In this way the conventional aspect of marriage curbs the irrational romantic longings which are an essential part of free and spontaneous life. In a relation of obligation it may be impossible for some people to satisfy the deeper instinctual

side of their natures because this necessarily belongs to the unfettered outdoors and so they seek for its satisfaction in a freer relationship. Society has recognized that undomesticated desires of this kind are stronger in artistic and creative people than they are in more rational, more stable, and conventional folk and, in matters of love, judges them by more liberal standards. The artist himself may recognize that at times his muse comes to him in the guise of love so that in following his love he is also seeking the truth which it is his business to express. But the ordinary individual cannot excuse himself for following his love by urging the claims of creative genius. Perhaps, however, certain men and women, entirely unaware of what they are doing, do become involved in an erotic relation outside of marriage through a similar need to seek for the irrational life-giving spirit. They instinctively feel the need for a relation where the deeper Eros — the principle, or spirit of psychic relatedness — shall rule and convention be secondary. But instead of submitting to the laws of Eros they try to overcome the deadening effects of habit by snatching at forbidden pleasures, because they are unaware that the wandering of their erotic interest results from the call of a life urge within themselves.

If a real psychological progress is to be made, a state of culture (and modern marriage represents a high state of culture evolved through many centuries of discipline) may be superseded only by higher culture, which entails further discipline, a discipline applied to a part of the psyche which the former state had not domesticated, had perhaps only enslaved. The new culture must rest on a broader basis than the old. The old culture taught that in marriage the emotions must be servant to the will — "It is a wife's duty to love her husband." The new culture is directed towards domesticating these emotions and disciplining them in order that each man and woman may make an individual relation



to the Eros truth; a relation, that is, to the feminine *principle of relatedness* — as deep and binding as is the relation to the Logos truth, the masculine *principle of fact and logic*.

But a married woman who determines to enter on a course of action which involves an emotional relation to a man other than her husband inevitably faces a very difficult task. It is one in which she cannot plan ahead how she will act, what she will do, or what attitude she will take at any given moment. At the best she can only hope to find a way through the tangle by the most complete devotion to the dual truth of love and duty. Egotism and self-seeking can so easily hide under the cloak of high-mindedness, that the most unremitting watchfulness is necessary if she is not to be self-deceived as to her own motives. The greatest good will on the part of each of the three people concerned can hardly avoid some of the many pitfalls which inevitably beset them all.

Yet, if the difficulties can be weathered, even out of such a threatened disaster, something of value may be salvaged, some good may come. At the least, the marriage will not die through stagnation; this outcome will be prevented through the very necessity to struggle with the problems created by so fundamental a threat. Protest and rebellion against the old, formalized ways have brought renaissance in many realms of life. Love is no exception. By courageously meeting the threat to their relationship which a new love has brought, men and women have often found that their marriage was more vital, more binding emotionally, than they had conceived possible.

Indeed, there are probably few three-cornered situations which could not be worked through to a satisfactory conclusion provided — and it is a big proviso — that there is a sincere desire on the part of each to find the truth and to give it first place. If a right adjustment is to be reached

no fundamental need of any of the three can be disregarded or excluded by egotistic or possessive demands of one of the others. To give to *each* what really belongs there, not to snatch something from one to give to the other, these are the fundamental tasks which a divided love and duty impose.

The central person in such a group of three has special problems and difficulties. If this one is the wife, she seems to hold the position of power, with both the men depending on her. This seeming power may easily call down upon her the reproaches and demands of each of the others. She will learn perhaps to her surprise and chagrin that the position of power becomes in actual fact the position of service. "He that is greatest among you let him be servant." Such relations cannot thrive without being a spiritual quest, a religious experience, even while being the fulfilment of love. They must be a sort of religious enterprise or observance of a rite. They ought to be understood as the manifestation of a will, beyond the personal that seeks *its* ends.

WHEN we come to examine the extra-marital love relations of the self-supporting professional woman, we find again a different set of considerations. A woman of this group, at or nearing middle life, is naturally much freer than either of the other two of whom we have spoken. In matters of personal relationships she is a law unto herself. She owes no obedience to parent or husband in return for financial support for she is self-supporting. She is presumably a responsible human being who is well accustomed to making her own decisions. Her standard of morality is her own concern. If she experiences love at an age when most married women have finished child-bearing, and at a time when her own life and career are, perhaps, most exacting, the problem which faces her is necessarily very different from that of a younger woman. She already has many obligations which

she cannot, without careful consideration, lay down in order to marry; she is probably established in a home of her own with relationships, perhaps, of years' standing. To marry would mean a tremendous upheaval. Furthermore, if the man she falls in love with is about her own age, he also will hardly have gone so far through life without incurring responsibilities and relationships which do not leave him entirely free either to start a new ménage. There are, needless to say, not a few instances where women who are no longer in their first youth do meet suitable men who are free to marry; and this solution, in line with collective custom and opinion, is for many of them the solution of choice, but for others such a relatively easy solution is not available, or does not satisfy the special requirements of the individual case.

The problem which arises is unlike that of the quite young woman and also differs from that of the married woman. The difference in the latter case rests not only on the absence of those social and family obligations which marriage entails, but also on the relation to her own instinct which the unmarried woman has been compelled to develop on account of the absence of sexual expression. A woman who marries young does not know anything of the burden which years of unfulfilled instinct, long years of unbroken chastity, bring. This has been the problem of the unmarried woman.

In former times women, as well as men, have taken vows of celibacy for religious purposes, their experience of the love of God replacing in their lives the need for human love. But the modern woman has given up love and marriage not for the love of God but for a "cause," namely, for the sake of psychological and economic independence. To some women, especially to the pioneers in the feminist movement, the "cause" really took the place of the old religious object, and they were content to devote themselves body and soul to it. Today professional women, many of them, choose

that course in life, not at all from religious motives, but as a means of earning their living and finding scope for their abilities. Work undertaken for these reasons cannot satisfy their emotional needs. They do not give themselves "body and soul" to their work, and so both heart and body call out for satisfaction. Many women attempt to solve the problem by repression of their need. In a sense this is the easy way. Personal habit acquired through the years, the pressure of conventional opinion, and her own sense of what is morally right, all support the unmarried woman in her attempt to satisfy her life without overstepping the bounds of propriety. Probably the majority of professional women, in English-speaking countries, still choose this road.

So long as she does not fall in love, it is naturally easier for a woman to continue along this path. If, however, one particular man comes to hold a deep and increasing emotional importance for her, the struggle for repression will become more and more difficult. It is abnormal looked at from the biological point of view, for either men or women to pass the whole of their lives in unbroken continence. The effects of continued chastity on the woman's physical and psychological development have been variously estimated by different observers, but there is no doubt that they are profound and far-reaching. The sexual instinct through the process of civilization has become so closely linked with the emotions that complete sexual abstinence usually implies also the repression of *love*. This is more harmful than the absence of physical sexuality itself. Indeed, to take sexuality without love for the sake of physical relief would be more detrimental psychologically to most women than complete continence.

A deeply buried sense of inferiority and unfulfilment usually haunts the woman who has been preoccupied with her profession and has not given her love to any human

being. She seeks to compensate for her feeling of inadequacy in love with achievements in the world hoping that the recognition she will receive will take the place of the love she has missed. She therefore augments the importance of her work and uses it to increase her own sense of importance and convince herself that her life is worth while. This compulsive devotion gives her work drive, but also tinges it with a partisan quality which is bound to arouse opposition and distrust, increasing in turn the barrier between the woman and any possible love experience. The attempt to meet the problem of sexual repression by work only accentuates the difficulties of her situation.

Instead of repressing her sexual instinct and thrusting it down into the unconscious, the woman may take her lack of fulfilment as a conscious problem, not shirking the pain which it causes. She will then reap the benefit of her struggles in increased psychological development, even though she still remains unfulfilled in her love life.

In the present day a very considerable and perhaps increasing number of women meet this problem by accepting love and sexual relations as a part of their lives, even though they are not married. All these cannot be classed together for their motives and their problems vary enormously. There are, for instance, those who are promiscuous and make their livelihood through the exercise of their charms. Others, by no means promiscuous, who may, indeed, be faithful to one man over a long period, are, nevertheless, partly or entirely supported by their lovers. The self-supporting women, whose problems I am discussing here, are entirely distinct from these two classes.

The relation between a man and woman who are not married and who are financially independent of each other has an entirely different basis from either marriage or a non-marital relation in which the woman is supported by the

man. In either of the latter cases considerations of duty and expediency enter into the relation in a way which inevitably clouds and complicates the situation between them. The woman whose love relation is with a man who is not her husband and from whom she receives neither money nor support, has a relationship which is based on the emotional involvement between them and on that alone. The relationship is not enhanced through the advantages, nor hindered through the disadvantages, of the social and conventional bonds of matrimony and money considerations. In such a simple, uncomplicated situation the faithfulness of the two to each other depends solely on the integrity of their feeling and the sense of "aliveness" which they experience through their association. An extra-marital relationship — hampered though it is because of its unconventionality, the necessity to sacrifice the desire for children, the discretion and secrecy usually necessary, and the limitation of their time together — can yet, in certain respects, reach a freedom which is often conspicuously absent from the otherwise more complete relation of marriage.

For an association of this character is governed by the laws of the feminine principle. The masculine laws of contract, which rule marriage to such a large extent, have here been side-stepped. In this kind of relation there is no *obligation* on the part of the woman to perform certain duties, to accede to certain demands from the man, or to tolerate approaches not in accordance with her own desire — just because she is his *wife*.

If money and social position are her own, won by her own efforts, there can be no question of obligation on this score. The relationship is therefore cleared of a good deal which tends to mask the emotional realities in more conventional situations. Sometimes this freedom from limitations is welcomed as an easy way of escaping the responsibilities of mar-

riage and the demands of accepted morality. In such a case love will inevitably degenerate into mere pleasure-seeking. Others, who give their allegiance to the feminine principle, the Eros principle of relatedness which stands above all personal wishes, count the cherishing of love as more important than either the conventional code or their own personal satisfaction. These will develop psychological maturity and refinement, for submission to the Eros law entails discipline just as much as does submission to the conventional code.

The recognition of her own need for such submission, which comes to her through the nature and intensity of her own inner experience, is the chief consideration which makes a woman of high moral character and integrity feel justified in undertaking an extra-marital relation. When a woman of this type falls seriously in love, she is compelled to recognize the importance to herself of the emotions aroused within her. This, in turn, forces her to take issue with the conventional code of morals and to attempt to find for herself a way of acting which shall be *right* to her. To deny her love would be tantamount to the murder of part of herself, yet all her ancestral preconceptions warn her of the sinfulness of giving expression to her love, and this in spite of an intellectual opinion that independent women are free to act as they please.

To some the conflict seems to be insoluble. They cannot solve it and so they do nothing about it, which is to say that they continue to *act* as convention dictates, but do not really sacrifice the hope or prevent themselves from dallying with the desire for satisfaction. If a woman acts in this way she destroys a vital spark both in the situation and in herself. She probably becomes neurotic — the fate of all who carry for years an unsolved and unaccepted moral problem — and the relation suffers too. The relationship degenerates into a convulsive attempt to hold the man at all costs, all real

love is choked by such an attitude. Strange to relate there are instances where, instead of releasing himself and seeking life elsewhere, the man submits to this treatment. I know of one instance where a woman has kept a man dangling after her for twenty years. She is now hopelessly neurotic, while he still doggedly follows her with attentions and gifts. He is no nearer the fulfilment of his hopes than he was in the beginning when she admitted that she loved him, but for some moral scruple, would not marry him nor, also for moral reasons, enter into an extra-marital relation with him. They are still suspended in a state of indecision which keeps them remote from life.

Other women, with greater inner integrity, realize that they cannot hold the issue in suspension indefinitely without suffering from a psychic split which necessarily brings neurosis. They feel it is essential to resolve the conflict. Some realize that for them obedience to the moral law is more important than their love. If this decision is reached after a really profound self-examination, the woman will perhaps be able to sacrifice this particular love and re-assimilate it — a very different matter from repression. This course of action will bring pain, for she cannot avoid the suffering arising from her voluntary renunciation, but she will not break down psychologically and become neurotic as a result of her sacrifice. Indeed, the psychological effect which the decision has is most valuable as evidence of the motives which led to her choice of action. The insight obtainable from the outcome can be utilized as a guide to action if the decision can, at first, be made tentatively or temporarily. For example, a woman with such a problem before her may make her choice according to her best judgement, and then, instead of doing anything final or irrevocable, go forward cautiously in line with the decision she feels to be right. If she then finds that she is falling into neurosis (that her love for the



man cannot be re-assimilated, after choosing to follow the moral ruling; or that she is filled with misgivings and remorse upon deciding to overstep the conventions) she will be compelled to recognize either that her decision was contrary to the laws of her being or that her motives were not what she thought them. If her decision is based upon an unconscious complex, she will not escape the penalty of living according to ideas which do not express her real or essential nature. Indeed, one of the chief values which can be derived from such a fundamental conflict in life is that it challenges the basic assumptions on which an individual's character and conduct are built.

The majority of my readers probably concede, in theory at least, that women who are self-supporting are at liberty to run their private lives as they please, provided that they injure no one and preserve an outward aspect of respectability. This concession implies that if they behave decorously in public, do not obtrude their love affairs in an objectionable fashion, safeguard themselves adequately both from scandal and from pregnancy, the rest is their own affair; the exact degree of intimacy between themselves and their men friends is no one's business.

A woman who is actuated by such a standard usually finds that she makes a direct relation to men in a way which undercuts those social reserves which make an almost complete barrier around more conventional women and the men they meet. If she has really freed herself from the bonds and restrictions of the old social order, not only in her intellectual opinions but in a deeper way, she will find she possesses a talisman which enables her in all the simplest contacts of daily life to touch the real man behind the social mask. This unmasking of the human being opens the way for a deeper, more vital, more dynamic, reality to come to light. The door has been opened to life and Life may well come

in. Life, however, tends to be an embarrassing visitor in a well-organized, thoroughly domesticated, and controlled existence, in which Routine and Efficiency may have ruled unchallenged for years.

Thus, for the woman who has discarded the conventional way of guiding herself in emotional situations, the problem of what new guide shall be hers will arise almost immediately. If she attempts to let the affair "run along" and guide itself, she will soon find herself in difficulties, for her own desires and the man's can hardly be expected to tally at every point. Some standard, some impersonal principle, to which they can both consent to subordinate their personal wishes must be found if they are not to become involved in a struggle for domination.

If she is deeply in love, the acceptance and expression of her love feelings will be of very great importance to the woman. Accepting her feelings, however, is by no means so simple and easy as it sounds, for their acceptance will probably demand from her considerable changes in her whole attitude to life and to her own work. Her love will take more of her time than she could have anticipated; she will not only spend many hours with her lover, but an even larger share of her time will be occupied with musings and dreams and emotions which, before she fell in love, she would unhesitatingly have condemned as idleness and waste of time. In compensation for this, she is likely to find that her energy, both physical and mental, increases almost proportionately with the development of her emotional life. Although her energies increase she may find, however, that her desire for work and her interest in her career have not remained as absorbing as before. A subtle change may well come over the whole cast of her personality. In a hardly perceptible fashion, the emphasis on life's values has shifted. The change is one against which she may struggle vainly.

To her conscious, rational, intellectual attitude, it is absurd that her personal love life should interfere with her work. It does not affect a man in that way, why should it affect her ? It is not that she works less efficiently; she may, indeed, work better in one sense, but in some strange fashion she has lost drive, she cannot go at things with the old vehemence and passion. It is probable that her colleagues like her all the better for the softness, the more feminine grace, which begin to replace the old keenness and hardness, but to herself she may seem to be suffering a grave loss. Why should her love for a man rob her of her own ambition ? If she were getting the advantages of marriage it might be possible to accept the change in herself with good grace, because then she would have certain obvious advantages to set against her losses; furthermore, she would have a husband to fight for her the battles she can no longer fight in the old way for herself. Yet, there is hardly a woman but will admit that she would not go back for anything in the world. Life has gained too much from the warmth which has come not only into the relation to the one man, but into all her relationships.

In addition to this change in her professional attitude, the woman who accepts love has other burdens to carry. In the old days she was free. Now she is bound by an invisible thread to a man over whom she herself exerts no control; his comings and goings affect her in her most vulnerable place, but he is bound to her by no tie which the world recognizes. If he is seriously ill, she may not go to him. If he leaves her in anger, she cannot follow to be reconciled with him. These limitations are constantly in the background of her mind. They have an unseen influence on many of her reactions. They may make her soft, so that she spoils him, humours him, tries to keep him in a good temper. If she is a more conscious person, the knowledge of her dependence

urges her on to establish a bond of *real* understanding and acceptance, each of the other, which may hold firm in case of difficulty, and which will be strong enough to act as an adequate substitute for the duty and *bond* of matrimony. But, all the same, anxieties and emotional preoccupations of this kind are necessarily often in the background of her mind. There is also another anxiety which she cannot entirely escape. However careful she may be in her use of contraceptives she can never be entirely free from the haunting dread of pregnancy, a dread which is harder to bear because one part of her nature longs for that which she is none the less compelled to fear. She has been obliged to renounce by a conscious decision the fulfilment of motherhood; yet there is hardly to be found a woman, who does not long to bear children to the man whom she loves. She may realize that it is impossible, she may recognize the necessity to carry her own burdens and not to complicate life by seeking fulfilment for herself in bringing into the world a child whose existence would be shadowed from its beginning. She may recognize all these things, and give them conscious assent, and still find herself haunted by thoughts and dreams of a child which should be hers and his. This desire will have to be sacrificed over and over again, for it has its roots in her biological nature. The desire for children is closely related to another insistent desire whose denial often causes her repeated battles with herself. This is the desire to make of her love and her relation to her lover an open and accepted social situation. The necessity to keep secret a matter of great emotional importance has an isolating effect which is hard to bear. The married woman speaks of her husband whenever the conversation requires it. She neither obtrudes him into talk nor is she obliged to exclude his name. In contrast to this, the unmarried woman must be ever on her guard not to give away to society in general the secret of

her liaison. She is lucky if she can allow her immediate circle to guess at her intimacy, even if she does not take them specifically into her confidence. For complete silence on the subject results in an isolation of the relationship from all contact with the rest of her environment, resulting in a certain quality of unreality. It is lived so exclusively, is touched so little by other realities, that it becomes almost like a dream life lived in an enchanted castle. This, at least, is the danger of having to guard it too closely from contact with everyday concerns.

All these matters make a love relation carried on outside of the conventional mode a serious undertaking. To be sure, it is not always regarded in this way. Some women are unable to face the problems involved in a serious relationship and prefer to shut their eyes to these considerations. They try to take their emotion lightly and to hide from themselves the deeper issues which are involved. Their attitude is one of pleasure-seeking. They hope by evading the responsibilities of marriage and by ignoring any others to be able to gain the satisfactions and emoluments of love without paying the price which life exacts. But love lived on this basis is hardly worthy of the name. If the woman does not take her end of the affair seriously, she cannot expect the man to do so; and the relation is not likely to go very deep or to last very long. In this way life, regardless of her attempt to escape without paying, exacts its price, either in heartache and regret or in the gradual deterioration of personality which overcomes any woman who has to seek one affair after another, each a little less vital, a little more sordid, than the last one.

If the woman is more serious-minded and less preoccupied with immediate pleasure satisfactions, she will summon courage to face the problems and difficulties of her relationship. When she does this she will be obliged first of all, to ask

herself again whether her love feelings are of sufficient intensity and importance to warrant the sacrifices which their indulgence will demand. She may be willing to undertake even the burdens of an extra-marital relationship, great though they undoubtedly are, if she really loves deeply. The next problem she will have to face consists in keeping the relation to the man clear and direct. He too must submit to his own feeling, and this allegiance she may have to demand from him, for he cannot be allowed to take merely for pleasurable satisfaction what, potentially at least, costs her dear. If his attitude in this matter of allegiance to feeling-truth is irresponsible, it will inevitably break up the relationship.

In a marriage the man's contribution to the cost of the love relation is in terms of his support of the home and in his care for those things which have to do with the man's world; he puts at the woman's disposal his physical strength, his knowledge of business, his ability to judge in many matters, and his sworn allegiance. But in a liaison he cannot offer these services. The service that *is* required of him is in terms of understanding. Here he has to learn the laws of relationship, how to act in accordance with the requirements of feeling, instead of in accordance only with thought. These things are hard for the man to grant. For instance, he cherishes his freedom and hates to be bound. If he is unexpectedly rushed at business, he resents the woman's demand to let her know that he cannot come to her at the appointed hour. He much prefers just to stay away, and to come back when he has more leisure. It never occurs to him that if she is expecting him and he does not come she will be not only disappointed, but sick with anxiety before the evening is over — more especially if the social situation is such that it is inadvisable to telephone and ask what has detained him.

If the man persists in doing such things, the woman is compelled to make an issue of it, for unless he gives his allegiance to the feeling-relation she cannot go on. The relationship between them, created through their love for each other, is almost like a separate entity with its own rights and obligations which cannot be disregarded except at the risk of destroying their love. It is very valuable to think of the relationship in this way, as an entity in itself. To do so helps to differentiate between personal or egotistic demands and the needs and requirements of the relationship itself, for these two considerations are not the same. In marriage, *the marriage*, and *the home* have largely attained to the position of a value *per se*; there it is an institution which holds supreme place as object of allegiance. In an extra-marital relation there is no equivalent "institution"; *psychological relatedness* is the paramount value whose reality must be progressively delimited, and before whose claims all personal considerations must be set aside.

But, because their relationship is not a social one, that is, one which is recognized by society and upheld by external forms and customs, because it has not, as it were, a material form such as is made by "the home" with all which that implies, the emphasis falls on the reality of their *feeling*. It is to this feeling, or love, aspect of their relation that their unflinching loyalty must be given. This belongs to the principle of *Eros*.

FROM the foregoing discussion it becomes clear that the opportunity arises in extra-marital relations perhaps more than in any others to develop a relationship between a man and a woman based purely on *Eros*. The discipline such relations impose is not the discipline of external laws or happenings. It is the discipline of the voluntary sacrifice of personal desires — whether for security, or children, or social approval —

and the submission of these most human wishes to the exigencies of love and to the feeling realities based on love.

Through this sort of experience a woman can outgrow the childish morality dependent on blind obedience to an authoritative code and find, instead, a no less compelling law gradually developing within her to which she must give her unflinching adherence. This law, which is based on the validity of Eros truth — feeling reality — subserves the transformation of blind instinctive attraction into a conscious realization of life and love. It may seem to the onlooker that the woman is interpreting the Eros law quite arbitrarily in any given situation. The sceptic may say that she manipulates it to her own advantage. But this is not necessarily the case, for if her conduct and motives are observed more closely, it may be found that she regulates her life by loyalty to a new morality which is no less binding in its demands than the old. If it allows of, indeed compels, individual interpretation appropriate to the individual case, it is binding in a way that the old was not. Under the old law many people found that they could, by observing the letter, evade its more fundamental implications, but never can a woman who has given her allegiance to the new morality avoid the utmost implication of its dictates; the outer written law has been replaced by an inner spiritual one. "Whoever thinks this inner law easy let him keep its dictates one day!"

Under the old moral order a woman could give apparent obedience and beyond that steal whatever satisfaction she might, but under the law of the new morality she cannot so easily evade her moral conflict. The gap between the old order and the new — between her obligation to convention and her loyalty to the living experience of her love — must be bridged by a personal, more fundamental contact with the principles of Love and Truth, Eros and Logos, which govern her from within. A woman of no great in-



tegrity who can readily assume the liberty which the present day allows in the behaviour of men and women towards each other may be able to remain blind to the whole significance of this transition through taking love and sexuality lightly with a trivial or frivolous attitude. A slender tight-rope may suffice to carry a light-weight over a difficulty. A more considerable person would need to build a more substantial bridge.

Through an analysis of the unconscious some women have found a means to reconcile the opposing loyalties to the moral code and to love. But this reconciliation is necessarily individual. Each must seek her own reconciliations; there is no formula which points out a general way of solution. The problems are general in that they are very frequently to be met with, both among the more sophisticated groups of society today and, indeed, are not unknown in many simpler circles also. But the solution is still a matter of individual experiment. Each woman is compelled to take her own problem and to seek to reconcile in her life the warring loyalties and claims—a reconciliation which is no longer only a theoretic question but a burning necessity. She has to find her individual way through or be destroyed by the conflict. In the last analysis no theory will serve for a woman of deep integrity. She craves for and must find a practical way of life. She may not be able to *see* her way at all, she may feel herself to be quite blind. All she can do is to be loyal to the life within her; to safeguard as far as possible the interests of others and beyond that to decide each incident as she can, giving due weight with the best of her ability to all the factors concerned. It is quite possible that she will find herself utterly helpless to safeguard adequately the interests of others. If she is married the interests of her husband and children cannot be completely protected; and in any case the interest of her lover, the possibility of offspring,

and the demands of conventional morality form conflicting obligations which cannot all be met in any *entirely* satisfactory way. Yet if she does not meet her obligations she naturally feels guilty. It is of no use for her to throw off her responsibility and say, "I could not help it, life was too difficult for me." These obligations are fundamental ones, and if any one of them is disregarded, she fails in her duty. This from one point of view is sin. Quite aside from a moral judgement, it is *blackness*. The realization of this fact is a burden which she herself must carry, and for which she must be prepared to pay. Indeed, she may find as life goes on that the price exacted is more than she can pay alone; others, and those her nearest and dearest, may also have to pay. Yet this impasse is not of her own making, it is part of life. By taking the alternative course she would not have escaped a perhaps deeper blackness and a still heavier penalty both for herself and those close to her. The alternative ways are in stark opposition, but if she works patiently through her difficulties, trusting herself to life, living each day as fully and as truly as possible, seeking through sincerity of *living* to solve the problem of their opposition, she may perhaps find a way to a reconciliation.

Certain women who have attempted in this simple and sincere fashion to live their lives to the best of their ability see on looking back over the period of perplexity and blindness how each step which they took fitted into a whole, invisible at the time, but making at the end a complete and amazingly apt solution of what seemed at the time to be an impasse. The end result, had it been consciously worked out, might have been called *clever*. Inasmuch as it evolved of itself out of a facing of the difficulties, it can only be called clever in the same sense as can a vine which finds its way through a stone wall into the light. The solution which grows up from the unconscious in this way has just that

kind of cleverness which the vine shows in finding its way to sunlight. For the human being, by a sincere and unconditional facing of the situation, develops psychologically and gradually overgrows the barrier. In *The Secret of the Golden Flower*, Jung writes, ". . . the most important problems of life are all fundamentally insoluble. They must be so, because they express the necessary polarity inherent in every self-regulating system. They can never be solved but only outgrown." \* The difficulties of a moral problem, such as the one we have been considering in this chapter, do not disappear, the opposing claims for allegiance remain, but the woman herself grows, and, perhaps, outgrows, or overgrows, the obstacle through the development of her own relation to the Eros and the Logos within herself. As a result, her relation to others involved with her grows and deepens also and a new level of mutual confidence is attained in which a degree of harmony, even among the opposing loyalties, at last becomes possible.

A solution of this character must inevitably be individual, unique, it cannot be used as a precedent by others. The time has not yet come and for all we know it may never come, when a rule of conduct can be promulgated to guide men and women through the intricacies of extra-marital love relations. Such affairs are and must remain the personal responsibility of each man and woman who essays them. The dangers both psychological and social are necessary safeguards to prevent mankind from recklessly leaving the trodden path, and, perhaps, slipping back into an animal-like indulgence in instinct, wherein would be lost that specifically human achievement—the capacity to love with the heart and the soul, as well as with the body.

\* Wilhelm, R., and Jung, C. G., *The Secret of the Golden Flower*, p. 29. Harcourt, Brace & Co., 1931.

---

## CHAPTER VIII

### *AUTUMN AND WINTER*

AFTER THE harvest and the fruits of the summer's work have been garnered there comes to nature in the late autumn one last brilliant flare of beauty in a generous outpouring of colour and vividness. The leaves do not just fade and wither and fall. Their death and decay are inevitable, but before they pass and are swept away into winter and death, they put on their most gorgeous dress in a final riot of life. In the lives of men and women a similar transformation is sometimes seen. The spring time of promise has been left behind with the early thirties; the heat and burden of the day, which characterized the middle period of life, have been laid aside; and as the first forewarnings of coming winter make themselves felt, an autumn of brilliance and beauty may be ushered in. The psychological energies which in earlier life were fully occupied with the inner and the outer adaptation are released from that arduous task and shine forth in pure beauty. This is the period of culture — the time of the beginning of wisdom.

The beauty of autumn and the acceptance of winter are possible in the vegetable world because plants follow their own natural laws completely, fulfilling their destiny in accordance with the changing seasons. But through the partial control of nature which man has achieved this complete following of natural law has been interfered with among human beings. And so the natural law of "downgoing,"

which inevitably follows every building up, overtakes many people unprepared. Old age and death can be warded off, perhaps for years, but in the long run even the strongest must meet them. For some this experience spells frustration, the gradual decay of all they have built up, with inescapable defeat as the end. For others, however, later middle life and old age do not spell defeat, but instead bring the opportunity for gathering in and enjoying the fruits of a life well spent. This outcome can only be achieved, however, by those who have passed, at least in some measure, through the three stages of psychological development previously discussed.

The peasant woman, in the naïve stage, accepts old age as a part of the natural course of life. When the time comes to resign her duties to her daughter she withdraws to the chimney corner and accepts the inevitable with the stoic patience of unconsciousness. She laboured throughout her life because work was there to be done; she bore her children and cared for her man, because that is the way of nature for woman. Then when old age comes she leaves the tasks, which have grown too heavy for her feeble strength, to others who replace her. Such a woman has very little sense of a personal ego. Life is the great reality and life goes on: its tasks must be accomplished regardless of who lives or dies.

A sophisticated woman, more conscious than a peasant, is aware of *herself* as an entity separate from the collective life of family and community, which passes on over the individual lives of each generation. Her consciousness of a personal ego brings new problems in regard to old age and death. The woman who is aware of *herself*; who has lived under the guidance of the ego principle, seeking consciously to gain power over nature and the external world and to satisfy her personal desires, cannot accept old age in the simple matter of fact way which is so characteristic of un-

sophisticated folk. For her the inevitable downgoing can be little else than a tragedy.

The Chinese say that when the moon is nearly full, at her brightest, at that moment the power of darkness is strongest within her — the dark power is most heaped up. Darkness overcomes not the crescent, in whom the light power *seems* weak, but the full moon in whom it appears to be strong. So, many a woman who has lived fully and well and has found success and satisfaction in life feels the “light” to be entirely dominant within her. She has learnt to exploit and control herself and her environment through the exercise and discipline of her ego; she is considered by her world an established and well-balanced person. Her management of her life — her whole life philosophy — appears to have vindicated itself; the success it has brought seems to show that her attitude was the right one to take. Yet in the moment when she reaches the zenith of her power, the shadow appears on the wall — *Mene, mene!* — strength, power, dominance are doomed; the time of the shadow and of the downgoing has come. If her life is not to sink in tragedy and defeat, some new guide or principle, whose very nature shall be different from the old is needed for the coming phase of life whose opening is heralded in this sinister way.

The coming of autumn brings to light in pitiless fashion the weakness and deficiency of life lived under the rule of the ego. A woman who has developed to a stage of greater consciousness will welcome this phase of experience as gladly as any of the preceding ones. But one who has neglected this culture of her psyche, and developed only ego values, must inevitably view old age as a period of defeat, and will be at a loss how to meet it.

Most people, if they allow themselves to think about the subject at all, look forward to this period with fear and apprehension. The curtailments of activity and of the natural

powers seem to hold no prospect but one of frustration and failure. The increasing limitations arising from loss of physical strength and the failing powers of the body; the slowing up of the mental processes; the waning of sexuality; the loss of friends — these things loom up in the future like a series of battles, with defeat as their outcome.

No wonder that the majority of people put all their effort into warding off old age as long as possible. By "keeping young," and binding themselves to their children and to their work activities, they hope to hold on to life as they have known it during the years of their strength. Defeat will certainly come in the end; "but," they argue, "perhaps the period of ignominious submission to old age can be curtailed, perhaps even death may release us before the dreaded time of helplessness overtakes us." But in trying to keep up with the times, and with the younger generation, they really lag behind their own generation, they fail to keep up with their own time.

Surely this is the attitude of an adolescent people. In the childhood of humanity, and among primitive peoples today, there is to be found a method, shocking to us, of solving this problem. The old, when they can no longer bear children, work, or go to war are quietly put out of the way, a fate which overtakes them while they are still young in years, for primitive people age early. Thus the problem of old age is very largely avoided. Among modern western peoples it is evaded as far as possible by the prolongation of youth. But up to the beginning of the twentieth century, old people had a recognized place in the family circle. Today this is no longer so. Each individual man and woman must now face old age, with its difficulties and necessary adjustments, for himself.

In the Gothic period later life was reserved for religious development, after the heat and struggle of the day were

over men and women turned their attention to making their peace with God through prayer and meditation. Culture of the inner life was recognized as the specific task of the old, more especially if their active years had been passed entirely in secular occupations. For instance, Roger de Montgomery, cousin of William the Conqueror and First Lord of the Marches, consolidated Norman rule in Western England, created and maintained an armed frontier between Britain and Wales, organized the building of castles and forts along the Welsh border, and acted as baron or overlord of the surrounding country. When he began to grow old and his thoughts turned to the future, he realized that the time had come for him to leave the scene of his worldly activities and make his peace with heaven. He surrendered his duties to a successor and himself built an abbey and monastery which he entered as a monk. There he passed the evening of his days in cultivating the inner values for whose nurture he had found scant time in his youth.

Among Oriental peoples, older in culture than Western races, the period of old age is looked upon as the age of wisdom and the old are revered in a way quite foreign to us. To them the attainment of old age and its values is an aim towards which the best men and women direct their energies even while they are still young. It is not unusual for a statesman or a man of affairs to give up his worldly position at the height of his power in order to follow the disciplined life of the yogi. For they believe that only after the strenuous periods of youth and middle life have been lived to the uttermost can an individual acquire the wisdom of the inner life through which the whole meaning of his existence can be realized. In the Orient these values are naturally couched in religious terms, as they were in Europe during the Gothic period. For us the culture of the inner life is no less of the spirit even though we choose to express the values and sig-



nificances which it carries not in religious but in psychological terms.

Here Jung is again the pioneer and leader. The psychoanalytic schools of Freud and Adler help the individual to the adaptation of youth whereby he may satisfy his needs for power and instinct gratification. The middle-aged or elderly applicant for analysis is discouraged by these schools because he has already passed the period of life in which an extension of activity in the outer world could be expected to solve his problem. Jung, however, in studying the problems of older people followed the movement of the psyche as it pursues its course of retrenchment in the outer world and found that to the individual this was far from being pure loss but, on the contrary, was the necessary condition of bringing to birth a spiritual creation, no less important than the creations belonging to the earlier periods of life. He writes: "The afternoon of life is just as full of meaning as the morning, only its meaning is a wholly different one. Man has two aims: the first is the aim of nature, the begetting of children and all the business of protecting the brood; to this period belong the gaining of money and social position. When this aim is satisfied, there begins another phase, namely, that of culture." \*

Old age can no longer be considered a tribal problem, no longer a family problem, no longer a religious problem taken into account by society at large through the maintenance of retreats and monasteries. The problem of old age is today principally a personal one which each individual must solve for himself and its solution is hardly to be hoped for if preparation for it is delayed too long.

"The human being becomes master of the changes of nature if he recognizes the sequence and adjusts to the succes-

\* Jung, C. G., *Two Essays on Analytical Psychology*, p. 77. Dodd, Mead & Company, 1928.

sion of the seasons. In this way comes order and clarity into the apparently chaotic changes of the times, and man can adapt himself *beforehand* to the demands of the different times." So wrote a Chinese sage some three thousand years ago. The changes of the seasons we have learnt to recognize and to prepare for. The farmer sows his corn in expectation of the warm weather which will be coming. The householder lays in his winter's supply of coal before the heat of the summer has gone. The sequence of the year we recognize and adapt ourselves to its demands *beforehand*. The changes of the seasons which represent a life cycle are less generally recognized and many people fail to make adequate preparation for them in advance. Yet "the moving finger writes and having writ moves on"; the downgoing is inevitable. Each individual wishes to avoid being overwhelmed by the power of this inexorable fate; his ability to do so is almost exactly proportionate to the preparation which he has made. "The man who has contemplated death for a long while," runs an old Latin aphorism, "is the one who will meet it without fear."

In certain respects the need for preparation is recognized rather generally. The necessity, for instance, of saving for old age is an acknowledged one. But with certain people there appears to be a curious blind spot in regard to old age. They do not seem to recognize that their days of strength and the power to work are limited. They cannot visualize themselves as old. So they continue to live up to, or even beyond, their incomes, being caught by the salesman's slogan "everyone must have," as if they did not realize that more than physical comfort will depend upon the material preparation made for the later years. Serious poverty in old age will almost inevitably frustrate any attempt to achieve the inner development which should be the chief concern of the autumn of life; while dependence, whether upon children or

other members of the family, distorts a relationship which should be increasingly free.

A more conscious realization is needed of the extent to which psychological freedom in old age is dependent on financial independence. If the woman's attitude has been irresponsible and pleasure-seeking payment will be exacted in her old age in terms of irksome dependence. If, however, the failure to save has not been due to selfishness but has been a risk voluntarily taken in full awareness of the danger it involves, it may not have the devastating results which self-seeking inevitably brings. For instance, if a woman has sacrificed the independence of her old age in order to give her children a better education, a better start in life, and has done it openly, having talked it all over with them and reached an agreement about it, then in her old age she can perhaps accept support from them, as the payment of their debt, without all the emotional involvements and power demands which so often embitter the relation between aged parents and their children.

But all this is only outer preparation to meet the external conditions. An inner preparation is also needed to meet certain other aspects of age. As time goes on, for example, the older woman will find that the body demands more and more care and attention if she is to keep well. When she was younger she could put considerable strain on her physical resources and recover her strength in twenty-four hours. After reaching the age of forty-five or fifty years this is no longer possible. When she is tired she must rest or pay a disproportionate price in prolonged fatigue. If she is not to be ill, small physical ailments must be taken more seriously than formerly. These facts to be properly met need an inner adjustment as well as an outer one. This readjustment will need to take into account not only the actual disabilities of the moment but the progressive physical deteri-

oration of which they are but the forerunners. They are messengers of death and warn of the coming of the end.

To most people there comes a time as later life approaches when they are compelled to pause and take stock, looking back to estimate their accomplishments and forward to calculate what possibilities still remain. This period is particularly apt to occur at a time when the demands of life suddenly ease up. For the mother it comes when her children leave home, to go out into the world, either to college or to homes of their own. It confronts the professional woman when the question of retiring is raised or, in more tragic cases, when she loses her job on account of her age, because a younger and more vigorous woman is wanted in her place.

At such a time the woman, whether professional or domestic, may find herself confronting a blank wall. She looks back on what she has accomplished. The professional woman says to herself, "If only I had put my energy into a marriage, into making for myself a place in the hearts of husband and children, I should not be facing such a cold, meaningless old age!" From the married woman a very similar complaint is heard: "If only I had not given myself so completely to the children but had put some of my energy into my individual life, I should have something to show for the years, friends and interests to turn to now that the children need me no more and, indeed, repudiate me as if I were in the way!"

To many a woman, coming to consciousness of her dual nature only at the age of fifty or more, it seems utterly impossible to create anything of value from the years that remain. The sense of having come to the end of the road, the sense of irreparable failure, may be so terrifying and obsessing, so intense and imminent, that she can give her

attention to nothing else. Depression and insomnia fall upon her. Nothing holds value or significance. It is as though she drops into a bottomless pit. The fact that the rest of the world goes on with its business, apparently blind to the precipice over which all things have fallen for her, only aggravates her condition.

She has come to the period of downgoing and she does not know how to meet it. Western philosophy, based almost exclusively on the idea of progress, has nothing to offer in these circumstances. Any life accomplishment, no matter *what* it may be, however valuable, however complete, loses all its significance when the first poignant realization that all will be swallowed up shortly in extinction and death forces its way into consciousness. For there is no *external* achievement which *by itself* justifies the expenditure of the life energy. Man possesses a spirit as well as a body and because of this no work which is merely temporal can satisfy his conscience. Unless during his life-span on earth he has created something which shall transcend time his effort has been in vain.

Most people, however, facing the threat of old age, strive to keep on in the old way as long as possible. They do not revise their attitude, do not change the direction of their effort. Their achievement in the world has not been as great as their intention, and they struggle desperately in the later years to make up its deficiency. A woman whose life-work seems meagre to her (as it always must seem to any but the most self-deceived, especially when compared with the large range of youth's dream) may begin some new undertaking and once again flourish in the glow of expectation. This may go on into extreme old age and death may find her in no more than the "state of promise," with nothing made actual either in the external world or — what is more pathetic

— within herself. She is still an adolescent girl, looking forward to accomplishing at some future time that which shall justify her existence.

Some women remain all their lives unconscious that the law of devolution — of downgoing — applies to them. They go on, to the end, apparently in complete unawareness of the approach of death. Some of these are women who have passed beyond the “state of promise” and have actually accomplished in the world of reality. Their work, which may well be of real value, occupies the whole of their attention, to the exclusion of all considerations of a philosophic nature. They never question the value and importance of their work. It is as if the period of middle life were prolonged indefinitely. The challenge to pause and take stock is never heard by them. When actually old in years, they are still apparently in the full vigour of middle life. They die in harness. I have known at least two women physicians who continued in active practice until the middle eighties, working up to the day of their death as hard as they did at sixty. The period of middle life had been indefinitely prolonged: they never experienced old age. But old age is a part of life, with its own characteristic task — the development of inner or spiritual values.

The woman who has looked exclusively to her motherhood for giving significance to her life is not exempt from a problem similar to that of the professional woman. She too tries to ward off the inevitable termination of a phase which she has erroneously taken as the whole of life, by keeping a close hold on her children, seeking year after year, even after they have grown to be adults no longer needing her care, to find her own satisfaction in *their* lives and interests. Under this treatment they either become resentful or lose all capacity for initiative, for this type of mother steals the life opportunity of the younger generation. Her ability to ignore the flight of time

is simply amazing. I remember hearing one elderly lady commenting on the marriage of her daughter's friend; on how lovely it was that this "girl," in order to care for her mother, had postponed her marriage for fourteen years, and that now, after the mother's death, the "dear girl" was to be married. When reminded that the "girl" was nearly fifty years old, with the possibility of motherhood gone forever, the old lady replied, "Well, she will always be a girl to me," implying that, since *she* did not think of the younger woman as aging, time must have stood still for her. By this attitude she had barricaded herself against the necessity of adapting to the passage of time; by considering her daughters and their friends as "only girls," she exonerated herself from recognizing that they were being denied the right to live their lives fully, and justified both herself and the whole generation of "the mothers" in demanding the exclusive service and attention of the daughters.

In other cases the maternal rôle may be carried on into old age in a rather different fashion. As grandmother the older woman may again find an outlet for her maternal feelings. Many children have a relation of deep affection and close understanding with their grandmothers. Among American Indians and often in India and China, also, the grandmothers are the recognized teachers. The older woman plays the part of the "Wise One" who imparts, not factual knowledge but the wisdom of the race embodied in custom, dealing particularly with religious observance and with the relations of human beings.

If a woman is to attain to full psychological development, she needs to experience, at least in some measure, many phases of life. It is not sufficient that she develop one side of her psyche, whether this be the love aspect or the work aspect. The whole range of her psychical potentialities must be experienced if she is to come to anything approaching full

consciousness. Thus for the all-round development of her capacities for growth, a woman must live on both the Eros side and the Logos side of life.

In actual practice, however, most women find that they are compelled to give themselves almost exclusively to that experience which they have chosen as their *métier*. The woman, whose best, or at all events her most active, years are devoted to a love relationship with a man and to the bearing and rearing of a family, experiences life as wife and as mother. With few exceptions, such a woman cannot, no matter how talented she may be, at the same time devote herself to practicing a profession. Her relations with women, too, are in most cases left in an exceedingly undifferentiated state. Her chief concern is relationship with her husband; her friends are secondary. The professional woman, on the other hand, gives her attention and her energy not only to following her individual bent, creating directly in the world, but also to developing the ability to stand alone and to rely on herself in all the ordinary emergencies of life. To her, women friends are exceedingly important and she probably devotes a good deal of thought and care to cultivating her relationships with them. But her relations to men remain undeveloped; she does not learn how to function as woman to a man; and the maternal side of her nature has only a vicarious play in relation to someone else's children or to her subordinates in work.

Consequently, when a woman reaches the age of forty-five or fifty she is very apt to become aware of a lack in herself, corresponding to the lack in her too one-sided life. In other cases consciousness of her one-sidedness is forced upon her through the natural termination of her chosen adaptation. The mother, when her children grow up and leave her is heard to lament, "No one needs me any more." With no consciousness of any value in life other than in being needed



by someone else, she may well find herself on the edge of a precipice. She sorely needs to develop individual values and her relation to the Logos. The business woman who has devoted her life to those values which have been neglected by the married woman, having reached the peak of her achievement, finds, however, that life has grown stale. No longer can she nourish herself on success. Some experience is needed which shall give her emotional satisfaction and a chance to develop her Eros values.

Even among naïve middle-aged women, who are exceedingly unconscious of what is happening to them and not at all aware of the significance of their own actions, these life needs may be seen working themselves out. It is by no means rare for a woman whose children have grown up, to engage herself, either from choice or necessity, in some kind of work in the world. Sometimes these women succeed; more often they find themselves unable to compete successfully with younger, more enterprising, and better trained women. If they could recognize the subjective aspect of their adventure they would be content with a very modest external success, for their chief interest would then quite rightly be turned to the under side where the cultural effect of their undertaking upon themselves would become apparent. In the same way middle-aged professional women may seek a romantic adventure because of their own sense of need and loss, or may be forced into one through an unexpected attraction to a man. With them too the subjective aspect is more important than the objective one. Marriage at such an age is quite unlike the typical marriage of young people and indeed, may be excluded by the circumstances of the case; and the bearing of children is either out of the question or may be considered inadvisable. But as *subjective experience* such a love affair, late though it is, is of the utmost value and importance, for through it she may establish an entirely new contact with the

feminine values within herself, may experience the joy and the pain of loving another more than herself and of submitting to a law of her own nature which goes its way entirely regardless of the ego values she has spent her life in building up.

Thus there is opened to her a second life, lived in miniature as it were, but capable none the less of carrying the opportunity for psychological growth which she missed through her former one-sidedness. A woman who has in this way experienced both sides of her own nature shows, as old age approaches, a warmth and maturity resembling the red and gold of autumn. Her experience of love makes her humanly accessible, while the discipline she has undergone through work in the world gives strength to her character and balance to her judgements.

THE approach of old age brings with it a gradual deterioration of the body itself. A woman must face the loss of many of the characteristics of youth which have been among her chief assets. Not only will her strength and elasticity diminish as the years go by, but her complexion and figure will lose their youthful beauty. Because of the great value set on feminine beauty, this aspect of the loss of youth is of far greater moment to women than men. A man may be seriously hampered by losing his youthful vigour, but few men are seriously concerned when the colour of their complexion changes or wrinkles replace the smooth contours of youth.

It has been said that in youth a woman's good looks depend on her natural charms, but that after she passes forty it is her own fault if she is not beautiful, for after forty a woman's beauty depends much less than formerly on physical features and far more on her character and disposition. She is beautiful or ugly according to the kind of spirit that looks out of her eyes; she attracts or repels by the kindliness or bad temper which are expressed by the lines round her mouth.

In other words it is her essential "being" that counts rather than the accidents of her physical make-up.

The dark principle, as the Chinese call it, gains the balance of power at the turning point of middle life, and claims recognition not only from the one-sided, but also from those who have sought to give due weight to both sides of life. These, more balanced people too, must find a way of adapting to the limitations imposed by age. For them, however, the emphasis has already been shifted from the outer to the inner world, on account of their increased *self*-consciousness, so that they cannot be dismayed to the same extent by external changes and limitations. In certain respects the unavoidable physical changes hold considerable compensations, the release from the pressure of outer necessity giving freedom for occupation with the inner world. For instance, the loss of her moon-cycle relieves a woman of a recurrent problem in adaptation which the unevenness of her temperament during the sexual period imposed upon her. Again, release from the urgency of youth leaves her free to sense life in a more introverted fashion. She has shot her bolt and its success or failure no longer matter to her with the same intensity as it did when she was still in the arena of life. She is content to leave others to try out their strength, while she occupies herself with the problems which are the special concern of her own epoch.

This sense of the increasing freedom of older life does not always develop spontaneously. It needs to be consciously sought. There comes, for instance, to most people a day when they are forcibly reminded that their tenure of possession is transitory. Possessions, whether land, money, or other valuables must pass on to the next generation. "Things," material objects, have a duration in time which is so long in comparison to the life of man that the impermanence of human life cannot fail, at some hour, to come before every thinking person with startling effect. Life and death! The one so temporary;

the other so long in duration ! The recognition of this basic fact of life makes possible a very different attitude, not only in relation to material possessions but also to emotional and psychological values whether these are one's own or other people's. One cannot live through a long life without catching a glimpse of the inevitability of change even in those things which at the time of their flowering gave the most complete illusion of permanence. For example an intellectual conviction which seemed, at the time it held sway, eternal in its rightness, soon faded and was replaced by another; the emotional conviction of permanence born of being in love, also faded quickly or slowly and was in its turn supplanted by another love experience as convincing as the first. From the realization of such things an understanding of the impermanence of human nature in the *psychological* realm, no less than in the physical may be reached.

Yet something forbids us to stop there ! Much that once seemed permanent proves to be impermanent. The very qualities by which we have reassured ourselves of our immortality are often the most transitory. And yet even so the idea of a life which shall pass beyond death remains firmly planted in human speculation. Whether this belief is an illusion or the premonition of a truth, we do not know. All we can say is that the life energy which came out of the unknown expands during youth and middle age, then draws itself together once more and during old age gradually withdraws itself from the outer world finally sinking again beyond our ken.

This indrawing of attention is very characteristic of old age. The period of strength passes. The period of service goes by. In middle life the woman is needed, her energy and resourcefulness are drawn upon by those around her. But when she grows old, she is no longer needed. The recognition of this fact gradually forces itself upon her. She needs other people

now more than they need her. The tables are turned; whereas formerly she was strong, now she is weak. The recognition of her own powerlessness to serve may well leave a sense of emptiness which makes life seem no longer worth living. Some means must be found for traversing this empty space in the midst of which she asks herself anew, "What is the goal of life?"

We have spoken already of the mediæval baron who became a monk, of the Oriental statesman who becomes a yogi. These men follow a "rule," they enter an established school, they do as many others are doing. They seek for inner values by a recognized road, through an accepted religious practice. In our day no such school exists, no such custom is established among us, even the necessity to develop the inner life during the declining years is not generally recognized. If individual men and women are to seek for inner values which shall bring them to a conscious understanding and acceptance of the significance of life in its downgoing as well as in its expansion, they must tread a lonely path — must function as pioneers and that at a time of life when pioneering initiative is at its lowest ebb.

As people grow older, their contact with the primary realities of life tends to become more and more remote. Especially is this the case with the well-to-do. Their food is prepared for them, their only task is to eat it; their homes are kept by someone else, even their clothes and personal belongings are under the care of a trusted servant or devoted daughter.

All this means that the elderly depend increasingly on other people for interest and amusement. Much of the satisfaction available to younger people through actual contact with what may be called the *primary* duties of life is denied older people, either through their real physical helplessness or, a condition perhaps commoner, through their own lack

of understanding of their needs. For many older people relegate to others, the routine of daily life which they are quite capable of performing for themselves. "But," they say, "why should I do this when I can well afford to pay to have it done by someone else?" This argument would be valid if there were something of greater value which they could do in their all-too-leisure time. It reminds one of the story of the Hindoo gentleman who was "hustled" by his New York friend from a local to an express train on the subway. When he asked why they changed trains the New Yorker explained that by doing so one could sometimes save as much as three minutes. The Hindoo was silent for a moment. Then he asked: "And what would you do with the three minutes?"

If freedom from domestic duties leaves the elderly free only to sit in bored idleness until the next meal time comes round, the value of this release is at best questionable. Even menial tasks performed in the service of life are capable of giving a sense of satisfaction entirely unknown to those who have been waited upon all their lives. The duties of daily living, relegated to others at a time when they themselves were occupied in more strenuous and exacting work, would serve in the leisure of old age to save them from falling into a kind of vacuum. But it does not always occur to them that to be occupied even with simple tasks would be better than to remain idle.

Another factor in the situation which older people rarely appreciate is that their own idleness throws a burden onto those on whom they depend for their entertainment and occupation, as well as for all vital contact with life, even though they may be financially independent and have a home of their own. For instance if Grandmama is asked to her daughter's house, the party begins for the older woman only

when she actually arrives, while the daughter has had to fit into her busy life all the additional preparation which may be necessary. The younger woman with her many duties does not need anything more to fill her time, but seemingly must carry the larger share of work; the older woman whose day is empty except for the bright spot of the evening's visit, too often must wait for the "party," instead of sharing in the preparations which might occupy and interest her. The daughter naturally feels diffident about asking an older woman to do for her small services which perhaps she as a child did for her mother. The older woman on her part hesitates to offer help, realizing that as she grows older she cannot do so much as formerly for she tires more easily and any task takes her a much longer time to perform. Discrepancies of this kind are to a certain extent inevitable. But, perhaps, the inequalities might be reduced if they were recognized more consciously.

The amount of work an older woman undertakes will have to be gradually diminished, but there is no reason why she need be burdened with hours upon hours of utter idleness. As age advances longer periods will be needed for rest and in extreme old age strength may fail for any but the directly personal tasks of caring for herself and taking sufficient daily exercise. But in the period preceding this final stage, there may well be years when life's work is over and yet some measure of strength and a need for occupation and interest remain. During this period a woman will be far happier if she can make for herself a routine of small tasks to give interest and occupation for several hours every day. Through the simple hand-tasks needed for daily life, some degree of the peasant's close contact with nature may be regained even by those who through education and culture have cut themselves off from the primitive realities of life.

Today a call "back to nature" is heard. This call can be followed in a right way or in a wrong way.\* If in the heyday of life we drop our culture with its complexities and responsibilities and retire to a lonely place to rusticate we almost inevitably lose our conscious values. The experiment has been tried more than once in recent years as at Brook Farm; it has not succeeded, for the problems of the world cannot be solved by leaving the world. In the later years of life the situation is changed. The external world with its insistent demand for adaptations no longer claims so large a share of attention; the moral problems which clamoured for solution in earlier years lose something of their urgency. Instead death makes its presence felt. The increasing strength of the powers of the earth — darkness, decay, and downgoing — force themselves upon the old. At such a time a return to the simple realities, which every peasant knows, may bring, even to the more sophisticated, an understanding of the meaning of life not to be found in books.

For the light of the conscious personality grows up from the depths of the unconscious animal, the bodily existence. The light of consciousness will at death pass from our ken by that same road on which it arose. At times the spark of the spirit seems to have departed, even before death, from the very old, leaving the body to continue an almost exclusively vegetative life. Always as age advances attention is progressively withdrawn from the outer world. The field of consciousness narrows down little by little until for an old woman only those things which are close at hand retain any power to catch her attention. In earlier life a similar withdrawal of attention from the world is sometimes experienced during a serious illness. To the onlookers the

\* Cp. C. G. Jung, *Two Essays on Analytical Psychology*, p. 178. Dodd, Mead & Company, 1928.



patient seems to be unconscious. But should she recover she can perhaps tell of experiences so vivid and intense that they blotted out the outer world. It may even be that during her stupor she resented the simplest demands for adaptation because of the interruption to the subjective happening which was claiming at the moment her exclusive attention.

The old rarely come back to tell us of *their* experiences during the period of withdrawal from the world. But I knew one case where an old lady passed through a long period of senile melancholia in which she was quite apathetic. During this time she seemed to the onlookers to have passed into a state of blank forgetfulness as if her mind, indeed her psyche, were undergoing a slow process of decay. But this was not the case; she recovered her faculties before her death; her mind became clear and she explained that during the period of withdrawal from the external world she had been going through a prolonged subjective experience which resulted in a fundamental change in her attitude to the world. Her world-philosophy had been re-created.

This case is unusual because we have an account of the subjective happening. I am not so sure that it is unusual as an occurrence. It is quite possible that during the long periods of helplessness or even the pronounced apathy of the old, some profound inner change may be taking place which, if we could but be aware of it, would justify in our eyes the months or years of extreme old age which we are too ready to consider as nothing but a burden and loss. For the value of the last fifteen or twenty years of life lies in the opportunity they give to acquire a more subjective attitude. Only through such inturning of the attention is it possible to assimilate the experiences of the earlier years and gain a release from the activities and demands of the world.

In the case cited above, this change of attitude came about without any conscious intention on the woman's part. The

moral problems resulting from the divergence between her ideals and her actual experience, which had been presented to her by life had not been consciously grappled with. She had identified herself to her ideals, repressing all other facts, and had thus left the conflict unsolved. But the indrawing of the life forces occurring in the course of nature brought about a change which occurred in this case without her conscious effort. It is not always so. A transformation of this kind cannot be counted on to occur unconsciously without the co-operation of the individual. The period of later life can, however, be deliberately planned for and utilized in an endeavour to meet and solve problems and conflicts for which the activities of earlier life left little time. Through such a willed attempt, each individual man and woman today can seek for himself the development of his inner life which in other ages was supplied through religious retreats. By turning his attention away from the world, he can consciously participate in the movement of the life energy within himself. If his task is truly accomplished, he is ready to die when the time comes. Viewed from the outside this is all we know. The man who has prepared for death by living fully, both in the objective world and on the subjective plane, dies without struggle and without regret.

We spoke above of the recognition which comes to most people in face of death of the futility of any external accomplishment whatsoever. All creations in the world will pass — they cannot endure — and even before they crumble away, their human creator has gone we know not where. But when in later life the attention withdraws from the external world it may be that the life-energy gathers itself together for its last and most significant creative act. The human being *himself* becomes the recipient of his own life-energy. He is liberated from identification with the outer

world. He is free, as Whitman sings, "with the delicious near-by freedom of death" and like a free man can devote himself to the final task of his life which is — to use Jung's phrase — the *achievement* of Death.

---

## CHAPTER IX

### PSYCHOLOGICAL RELATIONSHIP

IN EACH successive generation, while some are seeking worldly success, others are concerned with the problem of *inner* culture and *inner* development. These men seek for a value by which they may be lifted from the animal level of ego and body desires to a more human and spiritual plane.

As far back as we can trace the history of what men have thought and felt, the sense of a value above personal considerations can be perceived acting as a powerful motive in man's life. This supra-personal value is the subject of many of the ancient books which have survived the centuries, and the images and pictographs of gods and pre-gods left by the earliest man are evidences of its influence. Whenever this value has been differentiated, man has tended to express it in a symbol or in a god — which is also, in a certain sense, a symbol, for those inner forces which we sense only, without either knowing or comprehending them, are generally concretized. This is so even at the present day. The idea of the "ether" is just such a concretization; it is really a symbol. Naïve man, less aware than the modern scientist of what he was doing, created, or perhaps we should say *perceived*, gods — symbols of the psychological and physical laws revealed through his experiences. Through his experiments in the outer world, man came upon the symbol of ether; through his inner experience he perceived the symbol of God. But just as the concept of ether held more of truth than was at first realized, so the symbol of God held truth greater than

any living man knew. It has been essential to man's psychological development and we make a mistake to discard it prematurely. But we, like the scientists, should keep always before us that essential "as if" which alone protects the user of a symbol from falling into superstition. The scientist says, "It is 'as if' there were an invisible fluid — ether !" The psychologist should say, "It is 'as if' there were gods and demons and ghosts."

Every man who consciously strives to relate himself to God brings about a development in the concept of God. A gradual evolution of God may be traced through the centuries, taking place side by side with the evolution of human culture and civilization. It is apparent in the Old Testament where the jealous and terrible Jahweh changes to the more spiritual God revealed in the writings of the later prophets. With the Greeks the primitive animal gods gradually became the cultured Olympians whose animal origin was still evidenced by the emblems they bore. For Zeus was once "That old One-foot," the Serpent; Athena, the Owl; Dionysus, the Bull.

In history, especially that of the Jews and the Greeks, may be seen the change which occurs when a whole culture is developed in relation to the supra-personal value which God represents. But when a generation arises which does not relate itself to God, then God retrogresses. Many scientists today, for example, hold a concept of God far more concrete and less psychologically evolved than that of the wise men of old, less evolved even than that of the wise men of such primitive tribes as the North American Indians—for the God they deny is still their concept of God, to whom they refuse the grace of their hypothetical "as if." Indeed, the idea of God is so generally linked to superstitious and almost anthropomorphic concepts that it fails to convey to most people the meaning of a psychological value, which is per-

haps better expressed by the term supra-personal value or object.

Whenever men have sought above all else for such a value they have gained an inner maturity and development which others of their generation entirely lacked. They have become wise men, seers. In the Orient these wise men are greatly respected and are frequently chosen as the leaders of public affairs. In the Occident the choice falls more often on men who have achieved worldly success. Western countries gain by this in efficiency, but too often sadly lose in wisdom.

Each generation has its own peculiar way of seeking inner values. The ways of the fathers are apt to seem bigoted and narrow-minded to the sons who fail to recognize that their modern culture, their ideas, their ideals even, are only possible because of the psychological development the fathers attained through their striving.

Our immediate ancestors sought their supra-personal value, conceived as "the Will of God," through their relation to the *moral law*. The great majority considered that a relation to the moral law involved external obedience only; some even substituted an appearance of conformity for obedience. Take, for instance, the general attitude to the moral law which regarded sexuality as wrong except when sanctioned by marriage. Adultery and divorce were to them equally immoral. The majority of good men and women accepted this ruling and obeyed the law. Married people remained together even when the bond of love was hopelessly broken. Misunderstandings, quarrels, a terrible atmosphere of resistance, rivalry, even hate, might develop, but the moral law was kept unquestioningly. Others merely appeared to conform; they kept the law on the surface, but in secret they found a way out. This outer conformity and secret nullification occurred chiefly among men; but women agreed

to the practice by persistently shutting their eyes to the facts, and by casting the blame on the "other woman." That these effects of the moral law are bad, we all today agree, as they are inimical to our own attitude to life, we are apt to conclude that nothing good can possibly come out of a philosophy of life based on conformity to a moral code.

But we must not forget that others, who really lived in submission to this same moral law — the will of God they would have called it — sought for a deeper meaning of life. When such a one found himself involved in a marriage where love and passion had grown cold, he did not seek to escape his fate through the by-paths of divorce or secret adultery, nor did he submit sullenly to his bondage. For him there was another way. He believed that the moral law should rule him *within* and control his motives, feelings and thoughts as well as his actions. He took the external form of his life — his unhappy marriage — as the limits within which his soul must develop. He strove to be really acquiescent; through repentance he gradually assimilated his resentments and frustrated longings and through self-discipline he controlled them. The man who *really* did this, who did not fool himself by disregarding his negative feeling and thrusting it into the unconscious, was doubtless rare. But those who struggled with their inner problems attained a depth and sweetness, a strength and maturity which men of all ages admire.

But to us in this twentieth century the older way is a closed book. For submission to the moral law meant in the majority of cases repression, and we have swung away from repression towards a greater acceptance of life. We demand release of energy and desire; freedom to work out each his own life in accordance with the promptings of his own nature. This attitude has resulted — again, I take the sexual side of life for my illustration, though illustrations in plenty

could be drawn from other spheres — in an enormous increase both in extra-marital relations and in divorce. If difficulties arise in a marriage, the first impulse is towards a separation. "Let us not be bound," is the great cry of the day. "Let us not pretend"; "Let us be conscious of our desires and our feelings — our resentments and jealousies, as well as of our loves."

The quest for consciousness and a deeper appreciation of reality stands today as a guiding principle, replacing the discarded "submission to moral law." But modern men and women in their quest for consciousness are not all motivated alike. By far the majority are controlled entirely by the desire for personal and ego satisfactions but others seek a relation to a supra-personal value which transcends these.

Where the personal desires are the ruling factor, the quest for consciousness does not lead to development, but only to a break-down of the moral law, permitting young people to experiment widely and wildly — a state of affairs which seems to the older generation nothing short of unbridled license. We cannot, however, assert that this is necessarily worse than the general and complete repression of fifty years ago. But I believe we *can* say that whether the natural instincts and desires are repressed or are taken as a guide and freely expressed, so long as an individual's action is in relation to *personal* and ego ends no development of the psyche will take place. Only when a relation to a value beyond the personal wishes and desires has been established can any real development and maturity result.

In a marriage of the old school, where obedience to the moral law was taken as guide, and submission to a supra-personal value furnished the motive power by which the primitive instincts were held in check, development of the individual's personal character could and often did take place. But development of the "relationship," with the in-



creased consciousness it alone could bring, was not sought and so only rarely resulted.

Let us examine a marriage in which the partners seek sincerely for individual development, but do not recognize the quest for relationship as of equal importance. Such marriages occur today as well as yesterday. A young man and woman marry. They love each other and for a time all goes well. But sooner or later some situation arises in which both are amazed and hurt. The woman, believing it a part of her "wifely duty" to make her husband happy, and his home a place of peace and freedom from worry, represses the hurt and greets him with the usual smile. He, on his part, seeing her smiling face, thinks the difficulty cannot be so bad after all, and, more unconscious of the feeling situation than the woman, takes his cue from her and also represses the hurt. The trouble blows over; each thinks of it as the other's fault or as "my bad temper." As they made no effort to arrive at the root of the difficulty, they can have no constructive understanding of its cause. In the course of time the same trouble recurs and is again repressed. Through this they may learn real self-control and the ability to assume an air of serenity in troubled hours. If they continue to love each other, they will grow in tolerance for the other's weaknesses and peculiarities of character, but at the end of a long life together they will still be fundamentally strangers to each other and to themselves. They have gained in personal development, but the relationship between them cannot grow under such conditions.

To many it seems but the part of all cultured and kindly people to overlook in this way differences and disagreements with their loved ones, and to disregard all the lesser faults of character or behaviour which would otherwise mar the peace and happiness of their home life. These people are cultured and disciplined. In difficult situations they act not

selfishly but according to a code; "a good sport," "a lady," "a Christian" would do so-and-so, and *so* they act. They are the highest type of those who act from an adapted persona. Their motives are "personal" ones. They want personal goodness, personal happiness, for others as well as for themselves; everything not in accordance with the standards of good behaviour must be excluded from action and if possible also from consciousness.

Not everyone, however, is satisfied by this way of behaving. More sensitive people, and weaker ones also, whose wishes are apt to be over-ridden under such a régime, are more acutely aware of disharmony. They are less able, perhaps, to exclude unpleasant things from consciousness, either because they are more aware of the unacceptable elements, or because their desire for truth is not satisfied by this rather blind attitude. Thus many people today are not content to take *personal* happiness and harmony as their aim. They have to seek out the *real truth* of the matter and base their relationships on this. If the actions or words of their friends disturb them, they have to speak about it and find what is the underlying reality. For they seek consciousness even at the expense of present peace. Truth is for them a value above personal happiness and a harmony which may be based only on illusion.

To the older generation this process of aiming at "understanding" would appear very like bickering and quarrelling and, indeed, if the aim, consciousness, is lost sight of, it may degenerate into just such futility. Moreover, there is a definite danger in all this discussion of losing touch with the emotional situation in an intellectual analysis. Only a deep sincerity of purpose can avoid these pitfalls. There must be no attempt at self-justification to save one's face, no patronizing or impertinent dissection of the partner's character and psychology, no wandering from the actual incident into easy

generalities. Truth may be served only if each one holds loyally to his purpose of discovering his own hidden motives through an understanding of this bit of life. If the discussion is carried on in order to gain a realization of the unconscious elements of the incident, then the very difficulties which inevitably arise between two people serve to tear down the veil of unconsciousness in which many of their motives are masked even from themselves. In this way a relationship unlike any other may be built up.

To undertake to talk over the problems of relationship in this fundamental way is no easy task. Misunderstandings between two people who love each other are practically always due to unrecognized ego desires or to dark unknown shadowy things lurking in the hinterland of consciousness. The difficulty often touches the weakest spot, the most intimate inferiority. It is connected with things hardly admitted to oneself; the deepest instinct of self-preservation hides them even from the nearest and dearest friend. To talk about such problems is difficult for everyone, but especially difficult, I think, for a man. It is peculiarly distasteful to him to have to work on problems of human relationship, and he is assailed by a great pull-back to unconsciousness when confronted with them.

For the woman, whose principle is Eros, or relatedness, the task is not so difficult. She meets her greatest inertia when the need is to become conscious of discrimination, of accurate definition — not when dealing with relations. How often has a woman exasperated her husband by interrupting him when he is painstakingly differentiating two similar things by saying, "It does not matter, it is all the same anyway." Here she is his inferior. But when it is a question of relationship the woman has an advantage over the man, for it is this which particularly interests her. She is willing to take the discrimination for granted, to over-ride it or accept

it on authority, but the relatedness is something over which she must spend time and energy.

This quality in women is one which men rather dread, for women make things concrete — relate theories instantly to practice. This is well illustrated in the story of a young scientist. He had been trying to isolate a certain vitamin which controls the growth of young animals. One evening he announced triumphantly to his wife that he had at last succeeded. "I'm so glad, my dear," she said, "how clever you are ! What does it mean I should give Johnny for his supper ?" She immediately and quite automatically *related* the new fact first to her feeling for him and then to her daily life without stopping to question what the substance was which he had just discovered, or what the proof of its efficacy, or how it worked, or, indeed, any of the questions a man would ask.

Psychological development for Western people, whether men or women, cannot progress very far, however, apart from relationship. We have not the ability to go deeply into self-knowledge through introversion uncontrolled by close contact with another human being. In the Orient many well-elaborated systems of self-culture as, for instance, the various yoga systems have been developed, which are based on solitary introversion though even there the disciple is usually in close relation to a teacher who guides and controls the work. But for us in the Occident, something beyond analysis of the psyche through introversion is needed for real inner development. Introversion is, of course, enormously valuable, especially when it is guided and checked by one experienced in these things — here we call such a one an analyst. But the resulting development must be tested against a reality of its own kind — in other words, a psychological relationship is absolutely necessary for psychological development.

What, however, do we mean by *psychological* relationship? And how does it differ from any other kind?

The word "relationship" is used in ordinary language to describe many different forms of human association, but most commonly to denote connection by blood. This does not preclude psychological relationship, but the two conditions are not identical. Two people closely related by blood may never have met each other. In such a case, blood-relationship persists, but no psychological relationship is possible. In other instances, the contact between the different members of a family may be close and constant. To the world they will present the appearance of a "very united family," and yet, if you inquire a little further, you may find perhaps that they are all complete strangers to each other, or that one member may be isolated within the group, living his real life apart in the seclusion of his own thoughts. As a woman once expressed it, "There may be a deal of family life and very little relationship!"

The various members of such a family are often extraordinarily alike, so that it is difficult for them not to be identified. Blood relationship implies a common, or partly common, inheritance and also, if the family is closely united in this way, a common environment. From these factors develop family resemblances which extend beyond the physical into the psychological realm. For instance, two sisters from such a family may look alike, have the same voice inflection, the same gestures, the same ideas, and, not content with this, the resemblance may be increased in matters which one would think were open to free choice, by their going to the same dressmaker; taking up the same studies; and belonging to the same club. They will even change their religion or their politics simultaneously—a unanimity which may occur against their will and possibly to their mutual annoyance. Their psychological condition approaches complete identity

even in ways which are ordinarily considered to be determined by chance. They seem to share a similar *fate*.

For instance, sisters, who are in this way identified with each other, often fall in love with men who are alike, perhaps even with the same man, and that without knowing of the other's involvement. Or they may marry men who do not appear to be alike but whose subsequent history is similar, as where two sisters both marry men who turn out in later years to be drunkards. In such cases the identification reaches into the unconscious as is witnessed by the striking similarity often to be found in their dreams. The members of such a united family usually attempt to differentiate themselves from one another by emphasizing certain external differences; but the identification, reaching as it does into the unconscious, will remain none the less a binding fact. In certain families each sister takes a clearly defined rôle — one will be the pretty and social sister, one the domestic one, one the clever one, and so on. This discrimination is felt by them to be a differentiation, but in reality it is a further evidence of identification — else why should not each sister be free to function on any or all sides of life? The answer is that in this case she is not a whole individual, but only a part of the family, she is identified to the other sisters, who together with herself, make up a completed whole. In such cases no psychological relationship is possible, for relationship implies separateness; things that are identical cannot be related.

For this reason it is essential for human relationships to be tested in a way which will bring to light identifications which otherwise nullify their psychological values. This can only be accomplished by expressing the real feelings and not repressing them. It is, of course, easy to recognize and admit that much enters into our social and business relationships which is an adaptation to the situation and not the expression

of our actual feeling. But this form of unreality does not disturb us; our "society manners" do not allow us to express what we are really thinking and feeling, and the expediency of a business situation compels us to wear a professional mask, a persona. Adaptations of this sort are more or less conscious; the mask is more or less voluntarily assumed for a particular purpose. In extreme instances, however, certain people so persistently and continuously act the rôle they have chosen to assume before the world that we begin to wonder whether there is a real human being inside the mask or not. Such a person has become identical with his persona: the "good hostess" who greets everyone with a gracious smile, even those she heartily dislikes, or the minister who utters pious sentiments on all occasions though he may have his moments of bitterness and irritation like most other men, furnish outstanding examples. In a relationship with such people no reality, in the psychological meaning of the word, is possible. For they only accept their conventional mask and do not recognize their own disagreeable feelings and reactions.

Does the search for consciousness, then, mean that a woman must cease being polite to people whom she does not like? Not at all! A persona is as necessary to a conscious woman as to an unconscious one — only instead of being a mask of conventional design which is mechanically worn, it must be developed as a living function relating the human being in a purposive way to the outer world. Above all it must have complete flexibility, so that it never conceals the individual from herself nor prevents her from appearing to others exactly as she feels whenever she wishes to do so.

In dreams the persona is often represented by clothing, and the symbol is an apt one, for clothes signify much. For instance, our clothes must be in general accord with the style of the day, for we are the children of our own historical

time, psychologically as well as culturally; they must be suitable for the occasion on which they are worn, and must also be adapted to the wearer. We feel it to be ridiculous for an elderly woman to wear clothes suitable for a girl of eighteen (it argues a certain infantility and unreality in the wearer) and we feel it to be almost tragic for a young woman to be dressed as though she were already done with life. Again if one of a studious turn of mind has no intention of letting the frivolous side of her nature live, frivolous clothes would give the lie to her intentions.

The persona must also agree closely with the inner reality. But this obligation does not mean that a woman can take the liberty in every situation of expressing the whole of her thought entirely unclothed, as it were. She would not walk into a drawing room clad only in her night clothes — much less nude. (Yet how many people have had just such a nightmare!) So also if she reveals her inner self naked before a group of people, she must not expect to be understood. Thoughts and feelings must always be mediated by an appropriate mask of manner and word, so that they may be adapted to the situation and comprehensible to the audience. Fully as many people fail to make satisfactory relationships through lack of a persona as through too much persona — a fact that few realize. Women especially are apt to be sinners in this respect. They expect the world to be tolerant of them, if only they are true to themselves. But they forget that one person's truth may be contrary to another's, may, indeed, be quite destructive to it. For truth is a powerful and a dangerous commodity and needs to be adequately guarded. It should be clothed, and that for the occasion, and not indiscriminately exposed. A new *Sartor Resartus* might be written in terms of analytical psychology. In the street — that is, with strangers and crowds — we are most guarded and most conventional; we wear coats and



gloves. For the house we have working clothes and social clothes. We may wear a bathing suit on the beach but must have an evening dress for a party, and only under the most intimate circumstances do we don a negligée. These things are allegories. To put on business clothes means that we are summoning up our determined effort to face the difficulties of our work in a business-like and impersonal way. Much of the criticism directed against women in business refers to a lack of the proper persona which allows personal considerations and feelings to obtrude themselves into a situation which should be entirely impersonal.

The same problem of the proper persona should be deliberately taken into account in social situations. To dress outwardly in an appropriate manner is not enough. A woman must attire herself inwardly as well, by collecting all her resources beforehand as a contribution to the general gaiety. If the man she loves is coming to dine with her, merely to dress with care and provide delicious food will not do — she must prepare subtle psychological food for the relationship as well. Many people seem to think that the fact of love is enough — that the situation can be left to take care of itself. They do not take this careless attitude towards material food — the dinner, they know, must be well chosen and served. Why is it that the same careful attention is so seldom given to psychological food of which the heart and mind must eat or go hungry ?

This inner preparation to meet a situation involves, however, more than the persona. For instance, a man puts aside his business worries in order to take part in an intimate social evening. This is a persona adaptation; but a time may come when to omit all mention that he is worried would amount almost to a deception. For if he shows himself to his friend as something other than he is, illusion inevitably creeps into the friendship. If, for instance, he always plays the rôle of

the "good sport" his friends and intimates may well identify him with his persona and come to think of him as rather hard, needing neither pity nor help in difficult places; whereas in reality, inside his persona, he may be like a quite unadapted child, shrinking in a very human way from suffering and hardship. Misunderstandings of this sort may undermine even the most intimate relationships of life where it is of the greatest importance to build on a firm foundation of reality. Many people, if they were to examine the basis of their relationships, would find that illusions, assumptions, and projections have entered in to an alarming extent. The solid ground of the friendship begins to shift beneath their feet and they do not know where they are; in any problematical situation they cannot interpret words or actions, for there is no standard to go by.

If the whole realm of human relationships is not to be left in this nebulous state in which each must muddle along guided only by a homemade empiricism, some standard of psychological reality must be found which shall be generally valid. In testing any reality we compare it with something of a like quality. If we wish, for instance, to estimate the hardness of an object, we test it with a solid — our hand or a hammer. We compare colour with colour, length with length, and so forth.

If a man wishes to test the validity of an idea, he puts away his hammer and foot-rule and compares the new and untried idea with well-tested old ones. Similarly, if a woman wishes to test the validity of another's feeling, she must bring her own feeling into play with it and not try to estimate it by thinking. But the feelings she brings must be her true feelings or they will not form a true standard by which to measure and she will remain ignorant of the other's reality. It is the same in testing motives: if a woman does not act clearly, if she confuses the comparison by camouflaging her

own motives, then the motives and acts of the other will be unclear to her also. She may have many theories and opinions but she cannot be sure that her conclusions are true of the object; they may well be but the reflection of her own inner lack of clarity.

We are obliged in everyday life to deal with the surface — the mask of the persona is worn by us ourselves no less than by others. We do not know what is behind that mask. If we are good judges of character, we may be able to guess something of what lies behind, but such knowledge does not necessarily make for relatedness. Only conscious people can be related in the psychological sense of the term, for they alone can reveal themselves intentionally. Conscious relationship demands not only that A know what is behind B's mask, but that B shall know too, and shall be willing for A to know. And the same must be true of A and his mask in relation to B. One is reminded of the old rhyme:

I saw Esau kissing Kate,  
The fact is, we all three saw,  
For I saw Esau, he saw me,  
And she saw I saw Esau.

But apparently in this case (since the incident was tattled to the world) nothing was said about it between them; it remained, as it were, clandestine, ministering not to relationship but to suspicion. Had Kate and Esau frankly talked it over with the observer and engaged either his sympathy or met his objections, the incident could have cemented the relationship between all three. As it was he could only "guess" at the situation; and Kate and Esau must always feel embarrassed when they meet him! Most important of all, the fact that their privacy had been invaded made it imperative that Esau and Kate clarify their own situation. Up to now affairs had progressed, let us say, in a state of dreamy

bliss but once their love-making is known to another, they must ask themselves what it all means and where they are drifting. Life has challenged their unconsciousness; life is demanding from them a new phase of consciousness. Whether they know it or not, their love-making can never be quite the same again. They must either go on to betrothal with marriage as the goal, or their relationship becomes one of intentional secrecy. Society knows this from the accumulated wisdom of life and has expressed it in conventional laws which psychologically are quite right. What ~~can~~ be done in innocence cannot continue to be done except as a conscious deception, once awareness has entered in. So long as the act is purely instinctive — that is, without consciousness — it is neither evil nor good. But when consciousness enters the field, then a decision has to be made; the situation must be clarified and a course of action must be definitely chosen. This will be either evil or good. In terms of the conventional morality of a generation ago, there was but one choice for the man, "If a gentleman is found kissing a girl he is immediately under the obligation of declaring himself and his intentions." We use different terms today, but the underlying morality is the same. As I said above, Esau and Kate and the bystander need to come to an understanding. The subsequent history of Esau and Kate will depend on what is the basis of their relationship. They may make a Victorian marriage, where unruffled happiness and a pleasant association are the ideals — but where no real relatedness between husband and wife are to be looked for. Or they may base their marriage on another principle, seeking for consciousness and development instead of mere harmony.

Details of the old type of marriage were rarely recorded; folk tales, fairy stories and, until quite recent years, most novels and plays came to their end with a trite, "And they

lived happily ever after," which underscored the peal of wedding bells. Until recent years contemporary interest was satisfied when the problems and difficulties between a young man and woman were so far overcome that the biological aim of life could be satisfied within the moral and conventional law. It was assumed that when the barriers to a conventional, "moral" sexual relation were surmounted, the problems of relationship ceased. From that point it was taken for granted that their conduct would be guided entirely by custom, that married people think, feel, and act in the same way; hence their life after marriage held no interest for the tellers of tales.

This point of view belongs to a state of society where the animus and anima are still completely unconscious and, therefore, autonomous, found only when projected to a man or a woman. In such a stage of consciousness the concern — as in the case of Tristan and Isolde — is with this mutual projection. A new state of consciousness and a new relation to the anima and animus is needed before the ideal of a more conscious relationship can dawn on the minds of men and women even as a possibility.

A step in this direction has been taken through the rebellion of women against the anima rôle imposed upon them. In the Victorian type of marriage the man felt little compulsion to adapt himself to the projection of the woman's animus, or, indeed, he felt it no burden to play the part of god in the household. We hear much more complaint from men, today, of the burden of this rôle. The woman, however, was called upon to mould herself far more to fit the conventionalized pattern of the man's anima, and must have suffered considerably from the hampering self-restraint involved. If we read the Victorian novelists, Dickens, for instance, we see that his heroines are exact representations of the man's anima — child wives, gentle, tractable, acquiescing,

characterless. To the modern woman it is a marvel that any man should look at the living models twice. Yet, strange to relate, the modern woman holds for man just the same charm as a Dora or an Agnes. We can only conclude that the man sees in her not what is actually there but the reflection of something deep in his own unconscious, which is to him infinitely alluring.

Where the bond between two people in love consists in this way in the involvement with their own anima or animus, projected to the loved object, the psychological aim of the life energy is fulfilled when the two are united. It is as though through such a union a life-cycle is completed on one plane. But this at-one-ness cannot be a permanent condition, for it is based on an illusion. If the woman were in truth the incarnation of the man's anima and were nothing else, and he, similarly, the incarnation of her animus and nothing else, then a marriage between them might offer a permanent solution of their life problems, for all the psychological affinities would be so satisfied in each other that no energy would be left free to disturb the situation by seeking restlessly for further satisfaction. Such a miracle naturally never really happens. The illusion of completion in the marriage may persist for a period, but eventually that part of the personality which was excluded in playing the anima or animus rôle, will begin to stir in its prison and rebel. There will come a rift in the complete veil of their happiness. There will be a struggle which will end either in readjustment or in the death of their love. Or this may happen: the terrible sense of disloyalty to the partner of years, perhaps, of happy married life will compel the other to repress again the disturbing element and to force it back further into its prison. A period will follow during which the lost happiness is partly refund. But always there will be present a haunting sense of its insecurity; its joy will ring a little hollow. Then

again will occur an uprising of the suppressed elements. This time, if the repressive attitude is persisted in, health may break down and a neurosis develop.

So long as his inner value is projected into the outer world, a man may seek it there for years, before he comes to realize that he is pursuing a mirage — that he has failed to find his anima, his soul, outside himself and has only wasted the time which should have been spent in seeking it within. He is a disappointed and a disillusioned man; he has gained nothing in development, and his love, rooted so insecurely in a phantasy, wilts and perishes in his hands. This is the inevitable result of the lived-happily-ever-after attitude to the problems of wedded life.

The simple fact that the modern novel no longer ends with the wedding bells is an indication that the stage of relationship represented by the projection of anima and animus no longer contents us; it is an indication that our field of consciousness is widening, so that a young couple can begin their association with a different aim. They will seek not merely to fulfil each the ideal of the other, not merely to make a "success" of their marriage, not merely to live according to the conventional idea of what constitutes a good husband, a good wife and mother, but instead will take truth as their goal and the extension of consciousness as the means of attaining it. In such a case their marriage will result in a relationship quite different from one based on illusion. "Every bond on the basis of common interest," said an old Chinese sage (and the finding of the anima and the animus in a mutual projection is such a "common interest"), "extends only to a certain point. Where the common interest ceases, the bond also ceases and the most intimate friendship passes over into hate. Only when it is based upon truth does the bond remain so firm that it overcomes everything."

The man and woman beginning their relationship on this

basis of truth, have many difficulties ahead of them. They do not know themselves and they cannot know each other. But an understanding of fundamental human problems may stand them in good stead when difficulties arise. For most problems of relationship depend on one of a small number of basic psychological "complexes," or blind spots. This discussion is based on the assumption that the man and woman concerned really love each other, and that they are well-meaning people who wish to make their relationship as true and lasting as possible. Problems arising from flagrant selfishness and bad temper or other breaches of the ordinary standards of considerate behaviour will not be considered here. Something more than good will and consideration is necessary, however, if a conscious or psychological relationship is to be built up between two people. For the roots of action often lie below the levels to which conscious introspection can penetrate, and conscious discipline and culture be applied. If such problems of relationship are to be solved, the unconscious roots of the difficulties must be systematically sought out and brought to consciousness where they can be dealt with.

For difficulties in relationship, however small, usually lead to profound problems. They may be "little" in their manifestations, but they are not little in their psychological significance. This explains why such "little" difficulties, if they are not dealt with, have power to wreck a seemingly sound relationship. Indeed it is not too much to say that most broken friendships really have "little" troubles to blame for their break-up. But if the roots of the difficulty are sought out an opportunity arises for love to exercise its humanizing power at a deeper level of the character than is ordinarily available. An intimate relationship is for this reason of inestimable value in the development of the individual.

Certain psychological roots or complexes are responsible



for such a large proportion of difficulties in relationship as to merit special mention. First is the demand for personal satisfaction and fulfilment from the partner, which, legitimate though it may seem, nevertheless can produce a bitter clash of wills. Another lies in the sense of inferiority from which most people suffer, and which can cause endless resentments and hurt feelings. A third cause of misunderstanding results from a lack of development on one side of the psyche with a consequent inability to handle certain problems of relationship wisely, and a fourth is due to the intrusion of the animus and anima into the relationship, resulting in misunderstandings based on the subjective and illusory character of the whole situation.

A surprisingly large number of the difficulties between any two people are likely to arise from the first source, namely, unconscious power demands and unrecognized possessive attitudes on the part of one or both. One of the great services close relationship can render the individual is to bring to light these slumbering ego attitudes. If the recurrent difficulties are to be overcome, the power-attitude must be recognized and foresworn, but if the difficulty is not to recur, something more than repentance for the particular incident is needed. Each incident serves to bring the power attitude to notice; but the demand is a manifestation of a deeper lying problem which can rarely be unearthed through a scrutiny of conscious motives. In order to find its roots it will be necessary to explore the unconscious aspect of the situation. Sometimes these lie fairly close at hand in the individual's infantile past, more often they have a deeper origin in the ancestral past. When through a far-reaching exploration of the unconscious a man or woman begins to bring to light these ancient and buried factors, the first thing demanded of him is a recognition that *there IS evil*. I wish to make this statement with great emphasis because many peo-

ple today deny its existence. They say that action is the result of inherited tendencies, or of conditioned reflexes or of the natural instincts and that the old idea of good and evil and of man's responsibility are outgrown. To them God is dead; there is no God and therefore there can be no moral responsibility; there is no evil. Others say that God is all powerful, suffusing all his works and as God is good there can be no evil. These attitudes lead to the belief that human problems can be solved by simply disregarding the *fact* of evil. Anyone who, with truth as his one criterion, has delved at all into the unconscious, must have become convinced of the existence and power of evil. But mere acknowledgment of the fact is not sufficient; more is needed if a solution is to be found for the problems it brings in its train. Such a solution is not found easily; it is not discovered by anyone unless, like the heroes of old who fought and slew the dragons, personifying the evils of their day, he also is prepared to risk life and limb in the fight, against the monsters in the unconscious.

Let us take an example, supposing some action of the wife's seemed to her husband domineering, so that his reaction made it necessary to discuss the matter. She may protest that she was quite unaware of any egotism in her motives. She may, indeed, have thought herself co-operative, willing to give him and his wishes room, she may even have thought that she had acted altruistically "for his good." But at his protest she would be compelled to search for the unconscious motives of her action. Then she might find that far from being civilized and kindly, they were quite primitive, the expressions of the "natural man" hidden in the unconscious. This primitive being within her wants to dominate, wants always to be first; he "wants what he wants" fiercely, and will stop at nothing, not even murder, to get it.

He is Primitive Man entirely unregenerate ! She may well be dismayed.

Yet if she looks a little further she will find, coming also from the unconscious, an entirely different attitude and an entirely different set of desires, something compensatory to the egotism and dominance of the "natural man," for instance, she may find a willingness to be sacrificed. These attitudes are a pair of opposites, when one comes up the other goes down. It is an automatic mechanism. If an individual, having become aware of this dualism, identifies herself consciously to the more adapted attitude, she will "cleave to the good and repress the evil," and excuse her bad behaviour by saying, "I didn't mean to be dominating, I was a little out of temper"; or "You must try not to be touchy about my tone of voice, it does not mean anything." In this way, however, she only lays up trouble both for herself and her friend. For whatever is pushed last into the unconscious will be first to come up.

The evil is merely stored up in the unconscious; it cannot be made to disappear in that way. A persistent identification with the "good," resulting in a continuous repression of the "evil" is an attitude fostered by our Western culture and morality. Not only has it been practiced by individuals but for several generations it has represented the ideal of behaviour for the whole of society. If progress is to be made in development, however, the under side, the "evil," has sooner or later to be brought to consciousness and assimilated. An individual who refuses entirely to face the problem of his own *a*-moral desires may, it is true, die in the "odour of sanctity," but that is not the end of the story. His children, sharing as they do in the unconscious of the parents, have to take up the problem and either live out what he repressed or assimilate it in some other way. The fate of

the clergyman's son is proverbial. This law is illustrated in our day on a large scale by the almost complete overthrow of the code of sexual behaviour which for the last few generations represented the very kernel of the moral law. The repressions of the fathers make up the conscious attitude of the children; or, as the old saying has it, "The sins of the fathers shall be visited upon the children unto the third and fourth generation." For the sake of the next generation if not for our own it behooves us to find some way of assimilating the evil in our own unconscious.

But if identification with the good and repression of the evil effect no real change of character what further can be done? Awareness of the balance of good and evil in the unconscious seems to have led us no further in our quest for a more human and developed relationship. It is obviously no use for a man to identify himself to the unconscious and let the moods come as they will, now an evil one and now a good, each following the other like the waves of the sea, while he himself takes no responsibility for their occurrence. It may, perhaps, be asked, "Is he, then, responsible for the moods in his unconscious?" and we must answer, "No, he is not directly responsible." For the unconscious is part of nature, and is beyond his control; he is no more responsible for its moods than the mariner is responsible for the waves of the sea. The mariner cannot direct these, but he can direct his ship in relation to them; he can take an *attitude* towards them instead of merely drifting with them. In the same way the attitude which a man takes towards the moods of the unconscious determines the direction in which he moves.

The unconscious mirrors or portrays the facts viewed as it were from "the other side," and so is compensatory to the conscious appearance. If in the conscious, the woman takes a moral attitude towards her action, the unconscious will re-

spond. By *moral attitude* I do not at all mean one based on conventional morality, but on a far deeper loyalty to truth necessitated by the effort to achieve a conscious relationship. Accordingly she has to assume the responsibility not only for the conscious part of her action, but also for the unconscious part unexpectedly brought to light for which at that time she was not directly responsible. Through the discussion of the incident which her husband's protest brought about, however, she was made aware of something previously unknown to her. She has had a taste of the fruit of the tree of knowledge, she is no longer unaware, and can no longer claim complete innocence. Her newly acquired consciousness throws fresh light on her action and she must take up the responsibility for it as though she had been conscious when she did it. She must accept the *evil* shown in that action as her conscious burden and problem. By this acceptance her unconscious is relieved of the *evil* and is left free to manifest the complementary attitude. In the instance we are considering the *evil* in the attitude was a power or egotistic demand, ready to over-ride all other considerations to get what it wanted. The complementary attitude is a willingness to sacrifice the personal wishes, even to sacrifice the ego itself, rather than over-ride another. To accept the responsibility for the natural man's desires and power demands is a sort of eating or assimilating of the evil — a very different thing from repressing it or denying its existence.

Let us turn to the second group of relationship difficulties, namely, those dependent on feelings of inferiority. Every woman has (as also indeed has every man) certain sensitive spots in her psyche about which she has a sense of inferiority out of proportion to the actual conscious situation. These spots are, as a rule, carefully guarded and concealed, but sooner or later during the course of a close relationship they

are almost inevitably rubbed against unwittingly and become inflamed. Let us suppose that the wife has a sensitive spot in regard to her personal appearance. Although normally good-looking, she always fears that she is unattractive or perhaps even physically repellent. To any criticism of her appearance, either actual or implied, she reacts violently with self-justification or anger or perhaps with a high-handedness which is a compensation for her own feeling of inadequacy and humiliation. This is naturally a protective mechanism, but her husband, knowing nothing of the underlying situation, does not see the weakness she so carefully conceals. As he is probably not exempt from inferiorities of his own, he may well be hurt by her sharpness and a slight estrangement may result which they will have to talk over if they are seeking for a conscious relationship. Then the sense of inferiority underlying her sharpness will come to light. This is only a preliminary step, however. To discover that she has a sense of inferiority and to learn what it is attached to and what situations bring it into action, is an important piece of self-knowledge. But it is only the beginning; the question remains: What is it that makes her feel inferior?

Sometimes the feeling of inferiority is itself a compensation for a more deeply unconscious demand for power. If the woman is unduly sensitive about her appearance possibly the truth is that unconsciously she expects to be perfect and so cannot accept herself as an ordinary human being with faults and weaknesses like the rest of humanity. A phantasy of being a Princess often lurks under such a sense of inadequacy. In her own unrecognized opinion of herself she is all-perfect and all-admired, perhaps still Papa's little darling. If through her husband's challenge of her attitude, she discovers in her unconscious this kind of "perfection phantasy" with its accompanying demand that he admire her under all circumstances, the problem resolves itself again into

the need to "assimilate the evil," and recognize herself as the ordinary human being that she *is*.

But perhaps she feels inferior because some other woman of their circle is better-looking than herself. A sense of inferiority, however, does not arise simply because of a recognized and consciously accepted difference, but only if there is rivalry and a desire, conscious or unconscious, to excel. If she wishes to be first, then admiration given to another woman will seem like a threat to her position, and she will feel inferior.

In other cases the inferiority feelings may depend on an unresolved family bond. When you ask such a woman why she feels inferior, she may perhaps tell you that she was an unwanted child or that her older sister domineered over her. Adler has emphasized these family conditions in his theory of power psychology. The sense of inferiority may, indeed, have originated in some such condition, but one must still ask, Why do they persist into adult life? Is it merely a question of habit functioning? Or is it not rather that a certain quantum of libido, of interest, is still fixated on the parents or elder sister, and so is held unseen and unrecognized in the unconscious? If the woman is to become a complete and rounded-out personality this energy must be freed from the unconscious and applied to her conscious development. In other words she does not today feel inferior because years ago in her schoolroom days her sister was bigger than she was; she feels inferior *today* because part of her psyche has remained undeveloped. She has as it were, a flattened place on the circle of her individuality which can only be rounded out and developed through the redemption of the energy held in the unconscious by the image of an elder sister more successful than herself.

The libido or psychical energy, tied up with the father or the mother may produce similar results. Indeed this parent

fixation is more prolific of inferiorities than the tie to the elder brother or sister. Perhaps the woman may say, "I feel inferior because my mother did not like me. She always misunderstood me and put me in the wrong." Her life may be made miserable by the effects of her mother's attitude, even though her mother may have died years before. For as long as the daughter lives in a psychic world dominated by The Mother, her own mother occupies the place of Queen Regent in that little world and can continue to put her daughter "in the wrong." Or perhaps she may say, "I could not bear to hurt Dear Mama," having in consciousness the positive side of her fixation; or "Yes, Mother is exacting but Dear Papa always said we must not cross her." While she takes this attitude she is bound, not by her mother, but by her fixation to The Mother. Only when she dares to break free can she begin to live by some other law, some other standard than that imposed by her own mother. But strange to relate, this is something of a vicious circle: only when she begins to live by some other law, some other standard, can she dare to break free. So deep is the bond to the mother, guarded as it is by the most sacred ties of religion and custom, that nothing less than a supra-personal aim or value can impel her to break it. An object above and beyond her personal desires, sought for and served with religious devotion, is the one thing that can wean her from the mother. In many religions the figure of THE MOTHER holds a central place. Through devotion to Her, men have found release from the infantile bondage to their own mothers. But this statement also must be put the other way round. Christ said, "If any man come to me and hate not his father and mother . . . he cannot be my disciple," and only as a man succeeds in freeing himself from the tie to the human mother by a real sacrifice of the longing to be comforted and protected by his mother, can he serve with devotion THE



MOTHER who thus comes to hold for him a supra-personal value.

The third cause of difficulty in relationship to be discussed here depends upon the lack of development of one of the psychic functions. We will take as an example lack of development of the feeling function. Perhaps some misunderstanding occurs between a man and woman, but when they talk it over, they find no power problem or dark shadowy motive. The misunderstanding appears to have no basis in fact. What one did in all good faith and friendliness simply *is*, to the other, the reverse of a friendly and loyal act. This unresolvable sort of misunderstanding usually comes from ignorance of the laws of feeling with a consequent disregard of some essential need in the relationship.

For instance, a young man telephones to the girl with whom he is in love, asking permission to call. She answers the telephone in a room filled with guests, and unable in her embarrassment to talk with him freely, she makes some evasive reply and cuts the conversation short. The young man, knowing nothing of her predicament, is left wondering whatever he can have done or said to make her so reserved; perhaps he goes off in a huff. She for her part is quite unaware that anything she has said or done could have hurt him, and is herself hurt, when next she meets him, to find him distant and cold.

This situation seems to be so utterly trivial that it is hard to understand how any serious difficulty could arise. In real life, however, it is just such an insignificant episode which most frequently lies at the bottom of a serious misunderstanding. The two individuals, in our illustration, were probably entirely unaware of the cause of their estrangement and, indeed, if an inner voice should suggest the telephone conversation as the starting point of the difficulty it would be immediately dismissed as too small to warrant attention, or,

if the inner conviction should grow that this was the cause of the trouble few would be brave enough to pocket their dignity and avow it.

It is, however, somewhat misleading to say that such trivial incidents are the *cause* of misunderstandings. They are the occasion only, and if they were solitary incidents they could be dismissed without danger. But when such things occur, not once, but many times a deeper problem must be sought, just as one spot on the skin can be dismissed as probably a gnat bite but many spots indicate a constitutional disease, measles for instance.

In this trivial beginning of a misunderstanding, which does not seem to be the fault of either party, must be recognized a constitutional disease of the psyche, in this case a lack of development of the feeling function. For it arose from a disregard of one of the basic laws of feeling expression, namely, that in any situation involving two people there are at least two feeling trends or strands which must be kept separate and be given separate expression. These two considerations are the feeling for the person and the feeling for the situation. The girl should have said, "How nice of you to ring up. I am sorry I can't talk with you now, I have friends with me." But the young man too, failed on the feeling side. When he heard her cold tone of voice he might have asked, "Is there anything the matter, or is it that you are not alone?"

The need to pay attention not only to the feeling for the person, but also for the situation, seems so simple a requirement as not to need mention; yet I have repeatedly seen it disregarded in life in a way resulting in serious misunderstanding. The conventions of formal behaviour take cognizance of it, but in throwing off formality the collective wisdom it incorporates is sometimes lost. It is impolite, for

instance, to write in reply to a friend's invitation to dinner, simply, "I can't come." Convention requires instead: "How kind of you to ask me (feeling for the hostess), but I have another engagement (feeling for, or recognition of, the reality of the situation)."

In talking of feeling, we must bear in mind that feeling is not always *kind*, positive feeling. It may just as frequently be feeling against as feeling towards — it may be "I dislike," not "I like." This because it tends to withdraw from the object is called negative feeling. When it arises towards a loved one for whom the main current of feeling is positive, it always produces a conflict or even a sense of confusion or chaos. To express dislike of any characteristic seems to contradict the very fact of love. This confusion can be cleared up if the nature of feeling is more clearly recognized.

Feeling is not something solid, static; it is fluid, dynamic. It flows back and forth like the sea; it has depth, and that depth, like the sea's, is at a certain point fairly constant; it has currents flowing from one person towards another, to one the attachment grows stronger, to another weaker. Like the sea it has tides; as between a man and a woman, the tide of love rises or falls, diurnally or in a longer, monthly cycle. It has waves too — a continuous up and down movement of the feeling reactions between two people. One of them may have to say, "I love you deeply, but I dislike this thing you have done." If he is careful to phrase his reaction in somewhat that form, she will understand that the depth of his love remains, and will not fear that the wave of negative feeling may have obliterated it.

This reassertion of the positive side of the relationship, in opposition to the negative feeling, is a most important point to bear in mind when differences and divergences are under discussion; otherwise one of the friends may be left in doubt

as to how serious the estrangement is. The value of this rule is recognized conventionally, surely we should not be less careful in dealing with our friends.

The fourth source of difficulty that may arise results from the intrusion of the woman's animus or the man's anima into the situation. This is practically unavoidable as it is one of the main factors in the phenomenon of falling in love. Naturally it is the positive aspect of this projection which arouses love. There is, however, a negative side also to the anima and animus, and when this negative side becomes constellated between a man and woman, it arouses what is ordinarily called *animosity* — bad feeling. Very serious difficulties may result which are hard to clear up because the projection of the anima or animus takes place unseen and unknown. The subjective origin of the negative material is not for a moment suspected, the man or woman reacts to it as though it had originated in the partner.

The woman's animus generally takes the form of thinking judgements and opinions, leading her to make assumptions which are extremely exasperating to the masculine mind. Her great resource and standby is, "Oh, I see what you mean!" and this often before he has expressed his thought. Or she will, in her turn, recount an incident, burdening it with unnecessary details or insisting on some irrelevant point until she, as the saying goes, "drives him nearly crazy." This kind of thinking is always associated with a certain *noli me tangere* attitude which, if he loves the woman, arouses all that is dominating in him; if he does not love her, it drives him away. It was this kind of attitude which made a man once say, "I can't talk to a woman until I've slept with her." In this somewhat crude jest he was trying to express a truth he had discovered; namely, that animus thinking of this kind gives way if he can reach her *real* feminine nature; for then her psychological centre of

gravity leaves her head, as it were, to find its proper place in the centre of her being. She can function once again as a real woman.

The man's anima leads him to make assumptions about feeling. If his own feeling is not clear, he is very apt to assume negative feeling in the woman. He will act then "as though" she were vexed with him and become so grouchy as to induce real vexation in her — a result which naturally justifies him in his first impression. Much patience is required in dealing with this kind of difficulty. If the woman can keep clear of his projection and remain in contact with her own feelings she may be able to help him discover the trouble. If she senses, for instance, that he is in "one of his moods," it may be possible for her to take the initiative immediately and to ask him what the trouble is, instead of waiting for him to accuse her of some imagined unfriendly action.

Or in other cases his anima may lead him to project to her, instead of negative feeling, a certain positive feeling which is not true at all. He may, for instance, continually take it for granted that no matter what he says or does she will always understand and will continue to love him. This is, of course, a projection of the Mother to her, for only a mother continues to love a man regardless of what he does. If he fails, for instance, to give her any explanation of his actions, secure in the assumption that she is interested only in his welfare, he may be amazed at her reaction. For the ordinary woman, if a man leaves her suddenly without explanation, first wonders where he is, then begins to search her memory for a clue to the trouble, and finally is filled with anger at his neglect. He, coming back in his own good time and expecting to be met with open arms, feels injured to find her angry and hurt, and in his turn becomes angry. It may be that she "learns her lesson" and never shows him

anger again. But if she does "learn" the lesson after this fashion, it is the beginning of the end as far as any relationship is concerned. To attain a real, conscious relationship they will have to face the difficulty; he must attempt to find some way by which he can release himself from his childish self absorption, to the end that, counting no longer on the maternal-indulgence of his wife, he will no longer fall under the Mother's dominance within.

When difficulties, no matter what their nature, arise in the relationship between lovers the temptation to withdraw temporarily from the intimacy and to fly somewhere else inevitably obtrudes itself on consciousness. The woman longs to carry her troubles to her nearest woman friend for sympathy and comfort because her great need is on the feeling side and it takes an act of conscious determination to stay and work on the problem with her husband. The man is tempted to fling off and seek out another woman in order to find his sexual satisfaction in a temporary affair where the conditions are not so difficult, but where his obligation can be met by some material gift and where, above all, no intolerable demand is made to talk things over and to understand.

A close association between two individuals almost always causes friction of this character at some point. But if they are truly in love with each other, the relationship between them has one great asset to set over against the disintegrating effect of the friction, namely their mutual sexual involvement. If the instinctual bond between them is really deep and is deeply accepted, they are obliged to come back to each other however difficult their life together has been. This instinctual bond is like a compulsive force, it works between two people who have experienced profoundly together in this realm of life, even where the question of a conscious relationship and of love do not enter in. For in-

stance, a woman will take back a "brute of a husband" again and again if she has found contact with the instinctual life forces with him, in spite of the fact that he may spend all her money, ill-treat her physically and seek his pleasure elsewhere during her pregnancies. Du Bose Heyward showed such a situation in his play *Porgy*. The girl loved *Porgy*, all her tenderness and feeling both of love and of gratitude flowed out to him freely, but when her criminal husband returned and, as she says, "Put his hot hand on me," she followed him to inevitable degradation and misery. A man for his part will give up his business and family, will often surrender even his honour, to pursue a woman of doubtful reputation with whom he has had a deeply satisfying experience. For this contact with the life force will hold him as no self-interest can hold him to a wife with whom sexuality had been perhaps little more than a marital duty.

This matter of instinctual rapport is a very important one if a deep psychological relationship is to be developed between a man and a woman. For men and women are exceedingly incomprehensible to each other. All women, in spite of the fact that modern education has tended to mask the fundamental differences between the sexes, still have a similar standpoint in their assumptions and instinctual attitudes to life's problems. If the surface of any woman, even a feminist, is scratched, beneath it will be found reactions which are unmistakably feminine, but the masculine outlook, inherent in all men, differs markedly from the feminine one.

On account of this fundamental difference in point of view, it would seem that a conscious relationship between a man and a woman could never in the world be attained were it not for the compulsion of sex instinct which reaches deep into the roots of the psyche — roots whose beginnings penetrate below our personal consciousness, below even the racial, the human origins, into the dark abysses of our being.

A relationship which stirs these unconscious forces within a man and woman can lead them far in the quest for greater consciousness and psychological development.

In talking of a deeply significant instinctual rapport between a man and a woman, we have to bear in mind that the experience of sexuality is not the same for men as for women, but is, indeed, exceedingly different; and we must remember further that the rôle which sexuality plays in relationship is also a different one for them. These facts are not, I think, sufficiently realized. Few people have the courage to talk frankly to each other about such intimate and deeply personal matters, or they talk simply from the head, theoretically, which does more harm than good. Usually each one assumes that his partner in a significant and much-prized experience lives through exactly the same emotional and physical stages as he himself does. But this is a pure assumption which is rarely put to the test of a conscious discussion, and so it persists unchecked in a way which may later lead to serious misunderstanding.

For the man sexuality is the chief power or force which can bridge the gap between himself and the woman he loves; it is not so at all for the woman. When there is a difficulty or misunderstanding between them, *he* feels that if only they could come together sexually all would be put right. But *she* feels that under such circumstances a sexual approach is almost a violation. She *must* have the difficulty straightened out and the rapport on the feeling side re-established before she can give herself to him again in any real sense. If, however, he over-rides her reluctance, their union is likely to be unsatisfactory emotionally and perhaps physically as well.

The sense of satisfaction or of frustration resulting from the sexual act may even be an indicator or test of the state of rapport between two people. For men, and women too,



are often exceedingly unconscious of the nature of their own feeling states; they may not be aware at all of how they feel towards each other. Perhaps there has been a difficulty which has blown over. They think that everything is all right between them and they attempt to come together sexually. Then the lack of deep sexual harmony informs them of what they should have known before, namely, that there are still unworked out resistances between them.

Cultured people have been taught for many generations that if they act pleasantly nothing further is required. As a result a thick wall of unconsciousness has been built up (or perhaps has not yet been broken down) in regard to their own true feelings. This wall of unconsciousness is thickest in regard to the loved object. For the loved one is almost always idealized so that it is hardest there to become aware of the negative pull-backs from good feeling. Each one is most anxious that all should be right between himself and his beloved, and so the temptation to disregard the tiny warnings of danger is very great. Those warnings, however, come from deep within, but it is much easier to repress than to heed them. To bring out into the open those *little* resistances — those so unadapted hurt feelings — would make the man or woman feel soiled, or inferior. They hope against hope that by disregarding them, the hurts and resistance can be made to disappear. So they make love as they have been accustomed to do and come together in the sexual act, but if they are pretending, playing a part to each other, possibly also even to themselves, they will not find mutual satisfaction. The tendency then is to avoid talk about the experience — how can they talk about such an experience when the rapport is not exactly right! Instead each, as a rule, generalizes about the situation in ways usually derogatory to the other. Each feels that “perhaps after all the glamour of love cannot be expected to last forever” or

that "life is like that anyway." If instead of contenting themselves with such cynical assumptions the partners were to take this experience as a warning, they would be able to take a step towards building up a conscious relationship between them; the knowledge of their lack of harmony would then compel them to go back and discover what they had left undone, or where the unresolved difficulty lay which had robbed them of their real union. So slender, however, is the relationship and confidence which most men and women have built up in their marriage and so fundamental and age-old is the suspicion between men and women, that only rarely can a pair be found who are willing to risk all for the sake of consciousness and talk out such a problem.

The sexual rapport is sometimes threatened in another way. If the man has failed to free himself from his childish attitude that regards his own needs as paramount and the woman as responsible for their satisfaction, he may force his wife to play the rôle of mother to him. The almost universal custom that a man should bring gifts to the woman he loves is perhaps intended to counteract this insidious tendency. We find instances of this widespread custom among civilized men and savages alike. Malinowski in *The Sexual Life of Savages* states that if a man, or even a quite young boy, among the Trobrianders goes to his friend for sexual purposes, he always takes her a gift, a flower perhaps, or a fruit. This is an interesting primitive custom, for it is never doubted that the girl gets as much pleasure and satisfaction as the boy; and as the relation of paternity is not recognized in the tribe, the gift cannot be considered a compensation for her risk of pregnancy. It must have some other meaning.

This "other meaning" is perhaps related to the temptation, so prevalent among men, to seek for the satisfaction of their sexual needs in much the same spirit as the small boy

who demands from his mother the satisfaction of his physical needs — as a right — “I need it, give it to me.” This attitude has a tremendous hold on every man, as evidence we need but mention the large place which the Œdipus complex has taken in the literature of the new psychology. If he is to free himself from it and gain his own manhood, he needs to remind himself each time he approaches his loved one that the motive must not be his own personal satisfaction, but rather the desire that the instinctual, procreative life-force may live through him. If he is to be released from his infantile bondage to the Mother, he *must* bring a gift not to the woman he loves, for he does not need to pay her off, but to Womanhood who must be paid in order that the hold which woman has on him may be loosed — in order that the gift may release him from Woman — that he may release himself through the gift. It is to the Goddess of Instinct that he pays, the Great Mother within himself who otherwise would not let him go. The gift could be taken as well — as once, indeed, it was taken — to the temple of Aphrodite, or Hecate, or Ishtar.

But why must the man give a gift and not the woman also ? The answer lies in the different parts that men and women play in procreation. It takes but a small proportion of a man's time and energy ; from the woman it demands the sacrifice of her whole life, at least temporarily. In every act of sexual intercourse, the woman implicitly accepts her rôle as servant in the Temple of Life. For her all is not finished when the night is over. For the night may be to her but the beginning of a long service not to be completed until her child can fend for itself. Every act of intercourse is not, to be sure, followed by pregnancy ; but any one may be so followed, contraceptives notwithstanding, and every time a woman gives herself to the man she loves, she asserts again

her willingness to pay, not with a gift, but with her body, her time, her energy, even with her life, for the privilege of participating in that creative moment.

In the recognition that man does not live to himself alone even in his most individual and personal acts — not even in his relation to the one person in all the world whom he loves — in this recognition the truly religious spirit is born. The most precious things of life do not belong to us personally. In our most intimate acts, our most secret moments we are *lived* by Life. Again and again we are reminded that in the daily contact with one we love our little personal egos must be surpassed, only so can we take our place in the stream of life and submit ourselves to that supra-personal value which alone can give significance and dignity to the individual. For when two people experience each other unmasked — in stark reality — emotional energy, which has had its counterpart in the past only in religious experience, is in modern times released and made available for human development.



IN these chapters the psychological problems of woman have unfolded themselves as they occur in the various phases of her fate. Through facing the daily reality of her life a gradual growth and deepening of consciousness is achieved. Her personal and egotistic desires recede before a more fundamental aim and are replaced by a supra-personal value which is related to the deeper principles of life. Out of this development woman finds for herself a spirituality based on the principle of Eros, which is expressed in life by a new kind of human relationship.

As we have followed woman through the various vicissitudes of her life, the myth of womanhood, shrouded by the illusion of man's anima, which he has projected upon her, and which she has carried uncomplainingly through all the

years of her unconsciousness, has faded and the real woman, as she is in *herself*, has emerged. In so defining her personality she has released herself from the anima projection of the man; she has stripped herself as far as possible from the garment of glamour with which he has clothed her and has dared to reveal herself in her weakness and in her strength. Man's illusion painted her in colours superhuman both in their brilliance and in their sombre tones. To him she has seemed divinely fair and dæmonically ugly. When she steps out into the light, she both loses and gains by the change. Formerly the effects she produced arose from the unconscious, either her own or the man's and she could have little or no control over them. Now, for the first time she is humanly responsible for her own qualities. If she sins she can repent; if she does well it is her own doing. It is, indeed, unquestionably a gain in psychological evolution for by revealing herself as she is she has become a self-conscious individuality.

ल बहादुर शास्त्री राष्ट्रीय प्रशासन अकादमी, पुस्तकालय  
*„B.S. National Academy of Administration, Library*

## मसुरी

## MUSSOORIE

100399

यह पुस्तक निम्नांकित तारीख तक वापिस करनी है ।

This book is to be returned on the date last stamped

[illegible]

155. 633

Har

1003

अवाप्ति संख्या

Acc No. ~~1003~~

वर्ग संख्या

Class No. \_\_\_\_\_

पुस्तक संख्या

Book No. \_\_\_\_\_

लेखक

Author Harding, M. E.

शीर्षक

Title The way of all women.

निर्गम दिनांक

Date of Issue

उधारकर्ता की संख्या  
Borrower's No.

हस्ताक्षर  
Signature

155. 633

Har

**LIBRARY**

**LAL BAHADUR SHASTRI**

**National Academy of Administration  
MUSSOORIE**

Accession No.

100399

1. Books are issued for 15 days only but may have to be recalled earlier if urgently required.
2. An over-due charge of 25 Paise per day per volume will be charged.
3. Books may be renewed on request, at the discretion of the Librarian.
4. Periodicals, Rare and Reference books may not be issued and may be consulted only in the Library.
5. Books lost, defaced or injured in any way shall have to be replaced or its double price shall be paid by the borrower.